'What! is it you, Santillane!' answered he, embracing me; 'I should 'not have known you again. I am 'very glad to see you. What have 'you been doing since you left me? 'You have, doubtless, practised phy-'sick all along?'—'I was, indeed,' said I, 'sufficiently inclined to that 'profession, which, however, some 'strong reasons have hindered me from 'exercising.'

'So much the worse,' replied Sangrado. 'With the principles which 'you imbibed from me, you would 'have become an expert physician, 'provided Heaven had given you grace 'to preserve yourself from the dange-'rous love of chymistry. Ah, my son!' continued he, with an air of sorrow; 'what a change has happened in phy-'sick within these few years! That 'art is robbed of all it's honour and 'dignity: that art, which in all times 'hath regarded the life of a man, is 'now a prey to rashness, presumption, 'and *empiricks*; for their actions speak; 'and, in a little time, the very stones 'will cry aloud against the cabals of 'these new practitioners. *Lapides cla-'mabunt!* There are in this city phy-'sicians (or such as call themselves 'so) who are yoked to the triumphal 'car of antimony. *Currus triumpha-'lis antimonii.* Truants from the 'school of Paracelsus; adorers of 'kermes, accidental curers, who make 'the whole science of medicine consist 'in knowing how to prepare chymical 'drugs. What shall I tell you! every 'thing is turned topsy-turvy in their 'method. Bleeding at the foot, for 'example, hitherto so seldom practis-'ed, is now almost the only evacua-'tion in use. Those purgatives which 'were formerly gentle and benign, 'are now changed for emeticks and 'kermes. The whole is a mere chaos, 'where each does what he thinks pro-'per; transgressing those bounds of 'order and sagacity which our anci-'ent masters had so wisely prescribed.'

Whatever inclination I had to laugh at such a comical declamation, I had power to resist it. I did more: I exclaimed against kermes, without knowing what it was, and at a venture wished those who invented it at the devil. Scipio, observing that I made myself merry with this scene, had a mind to act in it also. 'Mr. Doctor,' said he to Sangrado, 'as I am grand-nephew to 'a physician of the old school, give 'me leave to revolt with you against 'chymical medicines. My late grand-'uncle (rest his soul!) was such a warm 'partizan of Hippocrates, that he of-'ten battled with quacks who spoke 'disrespectfully of that prince of phy-'sick. True blood will always shew 'itself; I would willingly perform the 'office of executioner to those igno-'rant innovators of whom you com-'plain with such eloquence and justice. 'What disorder must these wretches 'create in civil society!'

'That disorder,' replied the doctor, 'is more extensive than you imagine. 'My having published a book against 'the robbers of medicine, was of no 'use: on the contrary, the mischief 'daily increases. The surgeons, mad 'with the ambition of acting as phy-'sicians, think themselves sufficiently 'qualified, when there is nothing to 'be done but to give kermes and eme-'ticks, to which they add blooding 'at the foot, according to their own 'fancy. They even proceed so far, 'as to mix kermes in apozems and 'cordial potions; and so they are on a 'par with your celebrated prescribers. 'This contagion has spread also a-'mong the cloysters. There are some 'monks who act both as apothecaries 'and surgeons. Those apes of me-'dicine apply themselves to chymistry, 'and compose pernicious drugs, with 'which they abridge the lives of their 'reverend fathers. In fine, there are 'more than sixty monasteries of men 'and women in Valladolid; so you 'may judge what ravage is made in 'them, by kermes united with eme-'ticks, and blooding in the foot.'—'Signior Sangrado,' said I, 'you have 'reason to be incensed against these 'poisoners. I groan in concert with 'you, and share your alarms for the 'lives of mankind, which are so ma-'nifestly threatened by a method so 'different from yours. I am very 'much afraid that chymistry will one 'day occasion the total ruin of physick; 'in the same manner as false money 'proves destructive to kingdoms. Hea-'ven grant that the fatal day be not 'too near!'

At this part of our conversation, an old maid-servant brought in for the doctor a little light bread on a salver,

and a glaſs, with two bottles, one of which was filled with water, and the other with wine. After he had eaten a morſel of the bread, he took a draught of liquor, in which indeed there were two thirds of water; but that did not ſave him from the reproach which he gave me a handle to vent againſt him. 'Ah, ha!' ſaid I, 'Mr. Doctor, have 'I caught you in the fact? you drink 'wine then! you who have always de-'clared againſt that liquor; you who, 'during three-fourths of your life, have 'drank nothing but water! How long 'have you acted ſo inconſiſtent with 'yourſelf? You can't excuſe your-'ſelf on account of your age; ſince, 'in one part of your writings, you de-'fine old age a natural decay that 'withers and conſumes us; and, in 'conſequence of that definition, de-'plore the ignorance of thoſe people 'who ſtyle wine the milk of old men. 'What, therefore, can you ſay in 'your own juſtification?'

'You declare war againſt me very 'unjuſtly,' replied the old phyſician. 'Had I drank pure wine, you would 'have had ſome reaſon to look upon 'me as an unfaithful obſerver of my 'own method; but you ſee that my 'wine is very much diluted.'—'Ano-'ther inconſiſtency, my dear maſter,' ſaid I: 'don't you remember that you 'blamed the Canon Sedillo for drink-'ing wine, although it was mixed 'with a great deal of water? Confeſs 'freely, that you are ſenſible of your 'error; and that wine is not a fatal 'liquor, as you advanced in your 'works, provided it be drank with 'moderation.'

Theſe words perplexed the doctor, who could not deny that he had forbid the uſe of wine in his books; but ſhame and vanity hindered him from owning that my reproach was juſt, and he did not know what anſwer to make. To extricate him out of this dilemma, I ſhifted the diſcourſe; and in a moment after took leave of him, exhorting him to keep his ground ſtill againſt the new practitioners. 'Courage, Sig-'nior Sangrado!' ſaid I to him; 'be 'indefatigable in decrying kermes, and 'combat againſt blooding in the foot 'without ceaſing. If, in ſpite of your 'zeal and phyſical orthodoxy, that em-'pirical race ſhould ſucceed in ruin-'ing true diſcipline, you will at leaſt 'enjoy the conſolation of having don 'your utmoſt to maintain it.'

As my ſecretary and I returned to the inn, converſing together about the diverting and original character of the doctor, a man of about five and fifty or ſixty years of age paſſed us in the ſtreet, walking with his eyes fixed upon the ground, and a large roſary in his hand. I viewed him attentively, and eaſily recollected him to be Signior Manuel Ordonnez, that pious director of the hoſpital, of whom ſuch honourable mention is made in the firſt volume of my memoirs. I accoſted him with great demonſtrations of reſpect, ſaying, 'Health to the venera-'ble and diſcreet Signior Manuel Or-'donnez! the moſt proper man in the 'world to manage the poor's money.' At theſe words he eyed me narrowly, and anſwered, that he remembered my features, but could not recollect the place where he had ſeen me. 'I was 'often at your houſe,' ſaid I, 'while 'you had in your ſervice a friend of 'mine called Fabricio Nunnez.'—'Ah! I remember you now;' anſwered the director, with a ſatirical ſmile, 'by this token, that you were both 'arch lads, and played together many 'tricks of youth. Well! what is be-'come of poor Fabricio? every time I 'think of him, I am uneaſy about his 'circumſtances.'

'My motive,' ſaid I, 'for taking 'the liberty of ſtopping you in the 'ſtreet, was to give you an account of 'him. Fabricio is at Madrid, em-'ployed in compoſing miſcellanies.'—'What do you call miſcellanies?' anſwered he. 'That is,' ſaid I, 'he 'writes in proſe and verſe. He com-'poſes comedies and romances; in a 'word, he is a young fellow of genius, 'and is very well received in the beſt 'families.'—'But,' ſaid the director, 'how ſtands he with his baker?'—'Not quite ſo well,' anſwered I, 'as 'with people of faſhion: between you 'and me, I believe he is as poor as 'Job.'—'Oh! I don't at all doubt it,' cried Ordonnez. 'Let him make his 'court to noblemen as much as he 'pleaſes; his complaiſance, flattery, 'and cringing, will bring ſtill leſs 'into his pocket than his works. Re-'member I propheſy, that you will 'one day ſee him in the hoſpital.'

'That may very well be,' I replied.

'Poetry

'Poetry has brought many a one to 'that cataſtrophe. My friend Fabri- 'cio would have done much better had 'he remained with your worſhip. He 'would by this time have rolled upon 'gold.'—'At leaſt, he would have 'been in very eaſy circumſtances,' ſaid Manuel. 'I had a regard for him; 'and would have, by raiſing him from 'poſt to poſt, procured a ſolid ſettle- 'ment for him in the hoſpital, had he 'not been whimſical enough to ſet up 'for a wit. He compoſed a comedy, 'which was acted by the players of 'this city: the piece ſucceeded, and 'from that moment his head turned. 'He believed himſelf another Lope de 'Vega; and preferring the ſmoke of 'publick applauſe to the real advan- 'tages which my friendſhip prepared 'for him, demanded his diſmiſſion. 'I remonſtrated in vain, that he was 'going to quit the ſubſtance, and run 'after the ſhadow. I could not detain 'this madman, who was actuated with 'the fury of writing. He did not 'know his own intereſt,' added he. 'The young man who ſucceeded him in 'my ſervice is a living proof of this. 'Having more judgment, and leſs un- 'derſtanding than Fabricio, he applied 'himſelf wholly to the execution of 'his commiſſion, and ſtudied to pleaſe 'me. Accordingly, I have promoted 'him as he deſerved, and he now ac- 'tually enjoys two employments at 'the hoſpital, the leaſt of which is 'more than ſufficient to maintain an 'honeſt man encumbered with a large 'family.'

CHAP. II.

GIL BLAS CONTINUES HIS JOURNEY, AND ARRIVES SAFELY AT OVIEDO. THE CONDITION IN WHICH HE FOUND HIS PARENTS. THE DEATH OF HIS FATHER, AND THE CONSEQUENCES THEREOF.

FROM Valladolid we got in four days to Oviedo, without meeting with any bad accident on the road, notwithſtanding the proverb, which ſays, 'That robbers ſmell the money of tra- 'vellers afar off.' We ſhould have been, however, a pretty good booty; and two inhabitants of the cavern would have been ſufficient to carry off our doubloons with eaſe; for I had not learned to grow valiant at court; and Bertrand, my *moço de mulas* *, did not ſeem of a humour to die in defence of his maſter's purſe: Scipio was the only Hector among us.

It being night when we arrived in town, we went to lodge at an inn hard by the houſe of my uncle the Canon Gil Perez. I was willing to underſtand the ſituation of my parents before I ſhould appear as their ſon; and, for this piece of information, I could not apply to a more proper perſon than my landlord or his wife, who I knew to be people who were very well acquainted with the affairs of their neighbours. In effect, the landlord, after having eyed me with attention, recollecting my face, cried, 'By St. Antonio de Padua! 'this is the ſon of honeſt Uſher Blas 'of Santillane.'—'Yes, truly,' ſaid his wife, 'it is he indeed! he is very 'little altered: it is the ſame little 'briſk Gil Blas, who had always more 'ſpirit in his heart than beef on his 'bones. I think I ſee him ſtill coming 'to this houſe, with his bottle, for 'wine to his uncle's ſupper.'

'Madam,' ſaid I, 'you have a very 'happy memory: but, pray, tell me 'news of my family; my father and 'mother are doubtleſs in no very agree- 'able ſituation.'—'That is but too 'true,' replied the landlady: 'how 'bad ſoever you may think their con- 'dition is, you cannot conceive them 'more diſtreſſed than they are. Gil 'Perez, honeſt man, has loſt the uſe 'of one half of his body by the palſy, 'and in all appearance cannot laſt 'long: your father, who has lived of 'late with the canon, has got a de- 'fluxion in his breaſt, or rather is at 'this moment in the agonies of death; 'and your mother, though far from 'being well, is obliged to ſerve as a 'nurſe to both.'

On this report, which made me feel that I was a ſon, I left Bertrand with my equipage at the inn; and, attended by my ſecretary, who would not quit me, repaired to my uncle's houſe. As ſoon as I appeared before my mother, an emotion which I cauſed in her, ſig-

* A mule-driver.

nified

nified my preſence before her eyes had diſtinguiſhed my features. 'Son,' ſaid ſhe, with a melancholy air, after ſhe had embraced me, 'come and ſee 'your father breathe his laſt: you are 'come time enough to be ſtruck with 'that cruel ſpectacle.' So ſaying, ſhe carried me into a chamber where the unfortunate Blas of Santillane, lying on a bed that too well denoted the poverty of an uſher, drew near his exit. Though he was environed by the ſhades of death, his ſenſes had not quite forſaken him. 'My dear friend,' ſaid my mother to him, 'here is your ſon 'Gil Blas, who begs your forgiveneſs 'for the ſorrows he has occaſioned, 'and aſks your bleſſing.' At theſe words, my father opening his eyes, which death had begun to cloſe, fixed them upon me; and obſerving, in ſpite of his own lamentable condition, that I was very much affected with the loſs of him, ſeemed moved at my grief, and attempted to ſpeak, but had not ſtrength enough to utter one word. I took hold of one of his hands; and while I bathed it with my tears, unable to pronounce a ſyllable, he expired, as if he had waited for my arrival before he would breathe his laſt.

My mother was too well prepared for his death to be immoderately afflicted at it, and I was perhaps more grieved than ſhe, although my father had never given me the leaſt mark of friendſhip in his life. My being his ſon was a ſufficient cauſe for me to lament him; beſides, I upbraided myſelf for not having aſſiſted him in his diſtreſs; and when I reflected on my hard-heartedneſs, looked upon myſelf as a monſter of ingratitude, or rather as a downright parricide. My uncle, whom I afterwards beheld ſtretched on a truckle-bed, and in a miſerable condition, made me feel freſh remorſe. 'Unnatural ſon!' ſaid I to myſelf, 'contemplate, for thy puniſhment, the 'miſery of thy parents. If thou hadſt 'given them a ſmall ſhare of the ſuper-'fluity which was in thy poſſeſſion 'before thou waſt impriſoned, they 'would have enjoyed conveniences 'which the revenue of the prebend 'could not afford; and, perhaps, thou 'wouldſt have prolonged the life of 'thy father!'

The unfortunate Gil Perez was become a child again, having loſt both his memory and judgment. In vain did I preſs him in my arms, with marks of real affection; he ſeemed inſenſible of what I did. When my mother told him that I was his nephew Gil Blas, he looked at me with an unmeaning eye, and made no anſwer. Though blood and gratitude had not obliged me to lament an uncle to whom I owed ſo much, I could not have beheld him in a condition ſo worthy of pity without feeling the emotions of compaſſion.

All this time Scipio remained in a melancholy ſilence, partook of my affliction, and, through friendſhip, mingled his ſighs with mine. As I concluded that my mother, after ſuch a long abſence, wanted to converſe with me, and that ſhe might be uneaſy at the preſence of a man whom ſhe did not know, I took him aſide, and ſaid, 'Go, my child; go, and repoſe thy-'ſelf at the inn; and leave me here 'with my mother, who perhaps will 'think thee one too many in a converſa-'tion that will wholly turn on family-'affairs.' Scipio, rather than put us under any reſtraint, retired; and I actually diſcourſed with my mother the beſt part of the night. We gave one another a faithful account of what had happened to us ſince my departure from Oviedo: ſhe was minute in the detail of thoſe mortifications ſhe had ſuffered in the families where ſhe had been duenna, and told me an infinite number of things on that ſubject which I was glad my ſecretary did not hear, though he was entruſted with all my ſecrets. With all the reſpect that I owe to the memory of a mother, I muſt own that the good lady was a little prolix in her narrations; and ſhe would have ſpared me three-fourths of her hiſtory had ſhe ſuppreſſed all the trivial circumſtances of it: ſhe concluded at length, and I began mine. I paſſed lightly over all my adventures; but when I came to the viſit which I received at Madrid from the ſon of Bertrand Muſcada, the grocer of Oviedo, I enlarged upon that article. 'I own,' ſaid I to my mother, 'I gave that young man a very 'bad reception; who, to be revenged, 'has doubtleſs drawn a very frightful 'picture of me.'—'In that he did not 'fail,' anſwered ſhe; 'he told us that 'he found you ſo proud of the favour 'of the prime-miniſter, that you ſcarce

'deigned

'deigned to recollect him; and, when 'he described our distress, heard him 'with the utmost indifference. As 'parents,' added she, 'always endea-'vour to find excuses for the behaviour 'of their children, we would not be-'lieve that you had such a bad heart. 'Your arrival at Oviedo justifies our 'good opinion of you, and your pre-'sent sorrow confirms your apology.'

'You judge too favourably of me,' I replied: 'there is a great deal of 'truth in young Muscada's report. 'When he visited me, I was wholly 'engrossed by the care of making my 'fortune; and the ambition that pos-'sessed me would not permit me to 'think of my parents. It must not 'therefore be wondered at, if, in this 'disposition, I gave an unwelcome 'reception to a man who, accosting 'me rudely, told me in a brutal man-'ner, that, hearing I was richer than 'a Jew, he came to advise me to send 'you some money, of which you stood 'in great need: he even reproached my 'indifference for my family in very 'indecent terms. I was shocked at 'his freedom; and, losing patience, 'pushed him by the shoulders out of 'my closet. I own I was to blame in 'this rencounter: I ought to have 'reflected, that it was not your fault 'if the grocer wanted manners, and 'that his advice was never the worse 'for it's being brutally delivered.

'This was what I represented to 'myself immediately after I had sent 'Muscada about his business. My 'blood spoke in your behalf; I recall-'ed all my duty to my parents; and, 'blushing for shame for having per-'formed it so ill, felt remorse, which 'nevertheless can do me no honour 'with you, because it was soon stifled 'by avarice and ambition: but having 'been afterwards imprisoned, by the 'king's order, in the tower of Segovia, 'I fell dangerously ill, and that happy 'distemper hath restored your son to 'you: yes, it was my disease and im-'prisonment that made nature resume 'all her rights, and entirely detached 'me from court. I now thirst after 'solitude; and my sole motive for 'coming to the Asturias was to entreat 'you to share with me the sweets of 'a retired life. If you don't refuse 'my request, I will conduct you to an 'estate which I have in the kingdom of 'Valencia, where we shall live at our 'ease. You may believe I intended to 'carry my father thither also; but 'since Heaven hath ordained it other-'wise, let me have the satisfaction of 'enjoying my mother's company, and 'of making amends to her for my 'past neglect by all imaginable care.'—'I am very much obliged to your 'laudable intention,' said my mo-ther; 'and would go without hesi-'tation, if I saw no objections in the 'case; but I will not leave my bro-'ther, (your uncle) in this deplorable 'condition; and I am so much used 'to this country, that I cannot now 'quit it. However, as the thing de-'serves due consideration, I will think 'of it at leisure: let us at present take 'care of your father's funeral.'—'That,' said I, 'shall be ordered by 'the young man whom you saw along 'with me; he is my secretary, and 'has such zeal and understanding, 'that we may depend upon his care.'

Scarce had I pronounced these words, when Scipio returned, it being already day; and asking if we had any occa-sion for his service in our perplexity, I told him that he came very seasonably to receive an important order which I had to give. When he knew what the business was, 'Enough,' said he; 'I 'have already contrived the whole 'ceremony, and you may trust to my 'discretion.'—'Beware,' said my mo-ther, 'of making a pompous burial: 'it cannot be too modest for my hus-'band, whom all the town knew to be 'a very indigent usher.'—'Madam,' replied Scipio, 'had he been still more 'needy than he was, I would not 'abate two farthings of the expence: 'for in this I regard my master only; 'he has been the Duke of Lerma's fa-'vourite, and his father ought to be 'nobly interred.'

I approved of my secretary's design, and even desired him to spare no cost: the remains of vanity which I still pre-served, broke out on this occasion: I flattered myself, that in being at a great expence upon a father, who left me no inheritance, I should make the world admire my generous behaviour. My mother, for her part, whatever modesty she affected, was not ill pleased to see her husband buried in splendour. We therefore gave a *charte blanche* to Sci-pio; who, without loss of time, took

all

all neceſſary meaſures for a ſuperb funeral.

He ſucceeded but too well; and performed ſuch magnificent obſequies, that he brought the whole city and ſuburbs on my back; all the inhabitants of Oviedo, from the higheſt to the loweſt, being ſhocked at my oſtentation. 'This miniſter,' ſaid one, 'is 'in a great hurry to lay out money 'on his father's interment; but he 'was in none to maintain him.'—'He would have done better,' ſaid another, 'had he ſuccoured his father 'while he was alive, than to honour 'him ſo much, now that he is dead.' In ſhort, reproaches were not ſpared; every one had a fling at me: but they did not ſtop here; they inſulted Scipio, Bertrand, and me, as we came out of the church, loaded us with revilings, and hooted us as we walked along, and conducted Bertrand to the inn with a ſhower of ſtones.

To diſperſe the mob that was gathered before my uncle's houſe, there was a neceſſity for my mother's ſhewing herſelf, and declaring, that ſhe was perfectly well ſatisfied with my conduct. Some ran to the publick-houſe, in order to demoliſh my chaiſe; and this they certainly would have done, if the landlord and his wife had not found means to appeaſe their fury, and diſſuade them from their deſign.

All theſe affronts, which were the effects of the young grocer's report of me through the city, inſpired me with ſuch averſion for my townſmen, that I determined ſpeedily to leave Oviedo, where, otherwiſe, I ſhould perhaps have ſtaid a good while. This I plainly told my mother, who being very much mortified at the reception with which the people had regaled me, did not oppoſe my departure. What remained now, was to know how I ſhould diſpoſe of her. 'Mother,' ſaid I, 'ſince 'my uncle wants your aſſiſtance, I 'will not preſs you to go along with 'me at preſent; but as, in all appear-'ance, he has not long to live, you 'muſt promiſe to come to my eſtate 'immediately after his deceaſe.'

'I will make no ſuch promiſe,' anſwered my mother; 'being reſolved 'to paſs the reſt of my days in the 'Aſturias, in perfect independence.' —'Will not you always,' ſaid I, 'be 'miſtreſs in my houſe?'—'I don't 'know that,' ſhe reſumed: 'you may 'fall in love with ſome young girl, 'and marry her; then I ſhall be her 'mother-in-law; conſequently we 'cannot live together.'—'You foreſee 'misfortune,' ſaid I, 'at too great a 'diſtance: I have no intention to marry; but if the fancy ſhould ſtrike me, 'depend upon it, I will oblige my 'wife to be implicitly ſubmiſſive to 'your will.'—'That is promiſing too 'much,' reſumed my mother: 'I 'ſhould want ſecurity for my bonds-'man; and would not even ſwear, 'that, in our diſputes, you would not 'take the part of your wife rather 'than mine, how far ſoever ſhe might 'be in the wrong.'

'You talk reaſonably, Madam,' cried my ſecretary, joining in the converſation; 'I am of your opinion, 'that ſubmiſſive daughters-in-law are 'very rare. In the mean time, to accommodate matters between you and 'my maſter, ſince you are abſolutely 'reſolved to live in the Aſturias, and 'he in the kingdom of Valencia, he 'muſt grant you an allowance of one 'hundred piſtoles, which I ſhall bring 'hither every year. By theſe means, 'the mother and ſon will live very 'happy at the diſtance of two hundred 'leagues from one another.' The parties concerned approved of the propoſal: I paid the firſt year's annuity per advance, and quitted Oviedo next morning before break of day, that I might not be treated by the populace like another St. Stephen. Such was the reception I met with in my own country. An excellent leſſon for thoſe people of the common rank, who, after having got a fortune abroad, return to the place of their nativity, and affect the gentleman of importance.

CHAP. III.

GIL BLAS DEPARTS FOR THE KINGDOM OF VALENCIA, AND AT LENGTH ARRIVES AT LIRIAS. A DESCRIPTION OF HIS HOUSE. HIS RECEPTION; WITH AN ACCOUNT OF THE PEOPLE HE FOUND THERE.

WE took the road to Leon, then to Valencia; and, continuing our journey, by ſhort ſtages, in ten

days

days arrived at the city of Segorba; from whence, next morning, we repaired to my eſtate, which is but three leagues diſtant from it. As we drew near this place, my ſecretary obſerved, with great attention, all the country-ſeats that preſented themſelves to his view, on the right and left; and when he perceived one of a grand appearance, he always pointed to it with his finger, and ſaid, 'I wiſh that was our retreat.' —'I don't know, friend,' ſaid I to him, 'what idea thou haſt formed of 'our habitation; but if you imagine 'that it is a magnificent houſe, like 'that on ſome great nobleman's eſtate, 'I tell you beforehand, that you are 'furiouſly miſtaken. If thou haſt 'not a mind to be the dupe of thy 'own imagination, repreſent to thyſelf 'the ſmall houſe which Horace enjoyed in the country of the Sabines, 'near the Tyber, and which he received in a preſent from Mæcenas.'— 'Then I muſt expect to ſee a cottage!' cried Scipio. 'Remember,' I replied, 'that I have always given you a very 'modeſt deſcription of it; and this 'moment thou mayeſt thyſelf judge 'whether or not I am a faithful painter. Caſt thy eyes towards the Guadalaviar, and obſerve on it's banks, 'hard by that ſmall hamlet, the houſe 'conſiſting of four little pavilions; 'that is my caſtle.'—'How the devil!' ſaid my ſecretary, with ſurprize: 'that 'houſe is a perfect jewel! Beſides, the 'noble air that theſe pavilions give it, 'it is extremely well built, and ſurrounded by a more charming country than even the neighbourhood of 'Seville, which is called, by way of 'excellence, The terreſtrial paradiſe. 'Had we choſen our abode, it could 'not have been more to my taſte; a 'river waters it with it's ſtream, and 'a thick wood lends it's ſhade, when 'we are inclined to walk in the middle 'of the day. What an amiable ſolitude this is! Ah, my dear maſter! 'in all appearance, we ſhall not quit 'this place in a hurry.'—'I am overjoyed,' anſwered I, 'that thou art 'ſo well ſatisfied with our aſylum, 'which is more agreeable ſtill than 'you imagine.' Converſing in this manner, we approached the houſe; the gate of which was thrown open, as ſoon as Scipio ſignified that it was Signior Gil Blas de Santillane, who came to take poſſeſſion of his caſtle. At that name, ſo reſpected by thoſe who heard it pronounced, my chaiſe was admitted into a large court, where I alighted: then leaning on Scipio, and taking ſtate upon myſelf, I went into a hall, where I was ſcarce arrived, when ſeven or eight ſervants appeared. They ſaid they came to preſent their homage to their new maſter; that Don Cæſar and Don Alphonſo de Leyva had choſen them for my ſervice; one in quality of cook, another as cook's aſſiſtant, a third as ſcullion, a fourth as porter, and the reſt as lacquies, with orders to receive no money from me; theſe two noblemen intending to defray all the expences of my houſe-keeping. Maſter Joachin, the cook, who was the principal, and ſpokeſman of theſe domeſticks, gave me to underſtand, that he had laid in a large ſtock of the beſt wines in Spain; and told me, that as to eating, he hoped a young fellow, like him, who had been cook ſix years to the Archbiſhop of Valencia, muſt know how to compoſe ragouts that would tickle my palate. 'I will,' added he, 'fall preſently to work, and 'produce a ſample of my ſkill. Take 'a walk, Signior, while dinner is getting ready; viſit your caſtle, and ſee 'if it be in an habitable condition.'

I leave the reader to judge whether or not I neglected this viſit; and Scipio, ſtill more curious than I, dragged me from room to room. We ſurveyed the whole houſe from top to bottom; the leaſt corner, (as we imagined) did not eſcape our intereſted curioſity; and I had every where occaſion to admire the bounty of Don Cæſar and his ſon. Among other things, I was ſtruck with the appearance of two apartments, which were as well furniſhed as they poſſibly could be without magnificence; one of them was hung with Arras tapeſtry, and had in it a bed and chairs of velvet, ſtill very handſome, though made while the Moors poſſeſſed the kingdom of Valencia. The furniture of the other was in the ſame taſte, conſiſting of hangings made of old yellow Genoa damaſk, with a bed and elbow-chairs of the ſame ſtuff, adorned with fringes of blue ſilk. All theſe effects, which would have been little valued in an inventory, appeared there very conſiderable. After having thoroughly examined every thing, my ſecretary and

I returned to the hall, where the cloth was laid with two covers. We ſat down at table, and in a moment was brought in an *olla podrida*, ſo delicious, that we pitied the Archbiſhop of Valencia for having loſt the cook that compoſed it. At every morſel we eat, my new lacquies preſented to us large glaſſes filled to the brims with wine of a moſt exquiſite reliſh. Scipio, not daring to ſhew before them the inward ſatisfaction that he felt, expreſſed himſelf to me by eloquent looks; and I gave him to underſtand, by the ſame language, that I was as well ſatisfied as he. A diſh of roaſt meat, compoſed of two fat quails, which flanked a leveret of an admirable *jumet*, made us quit the olio, and finiſh our repaſt. When we had eaten like two gormandizers, and drank in proportion, we got up from table, and walked into the garden, to enjoy a voluptuous *ſieſta**, in ſome cool agreeable place.

If my ſecretary ſeemed hitherto ſatisfied with what he had ſeen, he was ſtill more ſo, when he beheld the garden, which he thought comparable even to that of the Eſcurial. It is true, Don Cæſar, who came frequently to Lirias, took pleaſure in having it cultivated and embelliſhed: the walks well gravelled and bordered with orange-trees, a great baſon of white marble, in the middle of which a brazen lion vomited out great guſhes of water; the beauty of the flowers, the variety of fruits; all theſe objects raviſhed Scipio; but he was in a particular manner enchanted with a long walk that led by a gentle deſcent all the way to a farmer's houſe, and was ſhaded by the interwoven boughs of the trees planted on each ſide. Here we ſtopped to make the elogium of a place ſo proper for an aſylum againſt the heat of the day; and ſitting down at the root of a young elm, ſleep eaſily ſurprized two merry boys, who had juſt made ſuch a good dinner.

Two hours after, we ſtarted up, awakened by the noiſe of ſeveral ſhot, which ſeemed ſo near that we were frightened. We got up in a hurry, and repaired to the farmer's houſe, where we found eight or ten peaſants, all inhabitants of the hamlet, who had ſcoured and fired their fuſils to celebrate my arrival, of which they had got notice. The greateſt part of them knew me, having ſeen me more than once at the caſtle, in the exerciſe of my ſtewardſhip. They no ſooner perceived me, than they cried all together, 'Long 'life to our new maſter, who is wel-'come to Lirias!' Then they loaded their pieces, and regaled me with a general diſcharge. I received them as courteouſly as I could; preſerving my gravity, however; thinking it improper to be too familiar with them. I aſſured them of my protection, left twenty piſtoles among them; and this, I believe, they did not look upon as the moſt diſagreeable part of my behaviour. I afterwards left them at liberty to ſpend more powder, and retired with my ſecretary into the wood, where we ſtrolled about till night, without being tired with beholding the groves; ſo charming is the firſt view of a new poſſeſſion.

The cook, his aſſiſtant, and ſcullion, were not idle in the mean time; they were buſy in preparing a repaſt, even ſuperior to that which we had eaten; and we were actually aſtoniſhed, when, returning into the ſame hall where we had dined, we ſaw them place upon the table a diſh of roaſted partridges, with a *civet* † of rabbit on one ſide, and on the other a capon in ragout. The next courſe of dainties conſiſted of pig's ears, pickled chicks, and cream-chocolate. We drank plentifully of Lucena, and ſeveral ſorts of excellent wine; and when we found we could drink no more, without expoſing our healths, we thought of going to bed. Then my lacquies, taking lights, conducted me to the beſt apartment, where they were very officious in undreſſing me; but when they gave me my gown and night-cap, I diſmiſſed them, ſaying, with a magiſterial air, 'Leave me, gentlemen; I 'have no farther occaſion for you to-'night.'

I ſent them all away; and keeping Scipio for a little converſation, aſked what he thought of the treatment I received by order of the noblemen of

* *Sieſta*, literally ſignifies the heat of the day, from noon forwards; but is here uſed to expreſs the afternoon's nap, enjoyed every day by the inhabitants of hot climates.

† A *civet*, is a ſauce made of the entrails of a hare or rabbit.

Leyva.

Leyva. 'In faith!' anſwered he, 'I 'think you can't be treated better: I 'only wiſh that this may laſt.'—'I 'entertain no ſuch wiſh,' I replied. 'It ill becomes me to let my benefac-'tors be at ſuch an expence on my ac-'count; this were to abuſe their ge-'neroſity: beſides, I can't put up 'with ſervants who are paid by an-'other; I ſhould not believe myſelf 'in my own houſe. Neither am I come 'hither to live in a buſtle; we have 'no occaſion for ſuch a great number 'of domeſticks; we want no more 'than Bertrand, a cook, a ſcullion, 'and lacquey.' Although my ſecretary would not have been ſorry to live always at the expence of the governor of Valencia, he did not oppoſe my delicacy in this affair; but conforming himſelf to my ſentiments, approved of the reform I intended to make. This being determined, he left me, and retired into his own apartment.

CHAP. IV.

HE DEPARTS FOR VALENCIA, TO VISIT THE NOBLEMEN OF LEYVA. HIS CONVERSATION WITH THEM, AND THE KIND RECEPTION HE MET WITH FROM SERAPHINA.

I Undreſſed, and went to bed; where feeling no inclination to ſleep, I abandoned myſelf to reflection. I repreſented to myſelf the friendſhip with which the noblemen of Leyva repaid my attachment to them; and, penetrated with thoſe new marks of their affection, reſolved to go the very next day, and ſatisfy the longing impatience I had of ſeeing and thanking them for their favours. I likewiſe enjoyed, by anticipation, the pleaſure of ſeeing Seraphina again; but that pleaſure was not pure; I could not, without uneaſineſs, conſider, that I muſt, at the ſame time, ſupport the looks of Dame Lorença Sephora, who, perhaps, remembering the adventure of the box on the ear, would not be overjoyed at ſight of me. Fatigued with all theſe different ideas, I at length fell aſleep, and did not wake till after ſun-riſe.

I was ſoon a-foot; and, wholly engroſſed by my intended journey, dreſſed myſelf in a hurry. Juſt as I had done adjuſting myſelf, my ſecretary coming into my chamber, 'Scipio,' ſaid I, 'you ſee me ready to ſet out for 'Valencia; I cannot make too much 'haſte in going to ſalute the noble-'men to whom I owe my ſmall for-'tune: every moment that I delay to 'acquit myſelf of this duty, ſeems to 'accuſe me of ingratitude. As for 'thee, my friend, I diſpenſe with thy 'attendance; ſtay here in my abſence, 'and I will come back to thee in eight 'days.'—'Go, Sir,' he replied; 'pay 'your reſpects to Don Alphonſo and 'his father, who ſeem ſo ſenſible of 'your zeal, and grateful for the ſer-'vices you have done them: perſons 'of quality, of that character, are ſo 'rare, that they cannot be too much 'eſteemed.' I ordered Bertrand to get ready for our departure; and while he yoked the mules, I drank my chocolate; then I got into my chaiſe, after having laid injunctions upon my people to regard my ſecretary as my other ſelf, and to follow his orders as if they were my own.

I arrived at Valencia in leſs than four hours; and going ſtraight to the governor's ſtables, there alighted, left my equipage, and was conducted to the apartment of that nobleman, who was then with his father Don Cæſar. I opened the door, and entering without ceremony, accoſted him in theſe words: 'It does not become valets to 'ſend in their names to their maſters: 'here is one of your old ſervants come 'to pay his reſpects.' So ſaying, I would have kneeled before them; but they hindered me from ſo doing, and embraced me, one after another, with all the expreſſions of genuine affection. 'Well, my dear Santillane,' ſaid Don Alphonſo; 'have you been at Lirias 'to take poſſeſſion of your eſtate?'—'Yes, Signior,' replied I; 'and I 'hope you will give me leave to re-'ſtore it.'—'For what reaſon?' ſaid he: 'is there any thing diſagreeable 'about it, that gives you diſguſt?'—'Not in itſelf,' I reſumed; 'on the 'contrary, I am inchanted with it. 'All that diſpleaſes me in it, is, to ſee 'cooks of an archbiſhop, with three 'times more ſervants than I want; 'which only ſerve to put you to an ex-'pence equally uſeleſs and conſide-'rable.'

'If,' ſaid Don Cæſar, 'you had

'accepted the annuity of two thou-
'ſand ducats which we offered at Ma-
'drid, we ſhould have been contented
'with giving you the houſe furniſhed
'as it is; but you know you refuſed the
'penſion; and we thought we could
'do no leſs than make you ſome other
'recompence.'—'This is too much,'
I replied: 'your generoſity ought to
'have been confined to the preſent of
'the eſtate, which is enough to crown
'my wiſhes. But excluſive of your
'coſt in maintaining ſo many people,
'at a great expence, I declare, that
'theſe people incommode and plague
'me: in a word, my lords, take back
'your eſtate, or allow me to enjoy it
'according to my own deſire.' I pro-
nounced theſe laſt words with ſuch a
determined air, that the father and ſon,
who did not at all intend to lay me
under any conſtraint, promiſed, at
length, that I ſhould live as I pleaſed
in my own houſe.

I thanked them for having granted
me that liberty, without which I could
not be happy; when Don Alphonſo
interrupted me, ſaying, 'My dear Gil
'Blas, I will introduce you to a lady,
'who will be overjoyed to ſee you.'
With theſe words he took me by the
hand, and led me into the apartment of
Seraphina, who ſcreamed with joy when
ſhe ſaw me. 'Madam,' ſaid the go-
vernor, 'I believe the arrival of our
'friend Santillane at Valencia is as
'agreeable to you as to me.'—'That
'is what he ought to be convinced of,'
anſwered ſhe: 'time has not made me
'loſe the remembrance of the ſervice
'he did me; and to the gratitude I
'myſelf owe him, I add that which I
'ought to have on your account.' I
told the Lady Governeſs, that I was
but too well requited for the danger
I had ſhared with her deliverers, in ex-
poſing my life for her ſake. After
many mutual compliments, Don Al-
phonſo brought me back from Sera-
phina's apartment, and we rejoined
Don Cæſar, whom we found in a hall
with ſeveral perſons of quality, who
came there to dinner.

All theſe gentlemen ſaluted me with
great politeneſs; and were the more
civil to me, becauſe Don Cæſar had
told them, that I was once one of the
Duke of Lerma's principal ſecretaries.
Perhaps, likewiſe, the greateſt part of
them knew, it was by my credit that
Don Alphonſo had obtained the go-
vernment of Valencia; for every thing
is known. Be that as it will, when we
were at table, the new cardinal was the
whole ſubject of the diſcourſe. Some
gave, or affected to give him great
commendations, while others ſeaſoned
their praiſe with ſome ſevere ſneers.

From hence I concluded, that they
wanted I ſhould enlarge upon his emi-
nence, and make them merry at his
expence. I had ſome inclination to
diſcloſe my ſentiments of him; but I
reſtrained my tongue: and this ſilence
made me paſs, in the opinion of the
company, for a man of great diſcre-
tion.

After dinner, the gueſts retired to
take their ſieſtas at their own homes:
Don Cæſar and his ſon, ſeized with
the ſame deſire, ſhut themſelves up in
their apartments; and I, impatient to
ſee a city, the beauty of which I had
heard ſo much extolled, went out of
the governor's palace with a deſign to
ſtroll through the ſtreets. At the gate,
I met a man, who accoſted me in theſe
words: 'Signior de Santillane, give
'me leave to ſalute you.' When
I aſked who he was, 'I am now,'
ſaid he, 'Don Cæſar's valet de cham-
'bre; but was one of his lacquies
'while you was his ſteward: I made
'my court to you every morning, be-
'cauſe you was very kind to me; and
'I informed you of every thing that
'happened in the houſe. Don't you
'remember, that I one day gave you
'notice, that the ſurgeon of the vil-
'lage of Leyva was privately admitted
'into the chamber of Dame Lorença
'Sephora?'—'I have not forgot it,'
I replied: 'but, a-propos, what is be-
'come of that duenna?'—'Alas!'
ſaid he, 'after your departure, the
'poor creature pined away, and died,
'more regretted by Seraphina than by
'Don Alphonſo, who ſeemed very
'little afflicted at her death.'

Don Cæſar's valet de chambre hav-
ing thus informed me of Sephora's me-
lancholy end, made an apology for
having ſtopped me; and I continued
my walk, ſighing at the remembrance of
that unfortunate duenna, and lament-
ing her fate, which I imputed to my-
ſelf; without conſidering that it was
more owing to her own cancer than to
my cruelty.

I obſerved with pleaſure all that was
worth

worth ſeeing in this city; the marble palace of the archbiſhop agreeably entertained my view, as well as the fine porticos of the exchange; but a large houſe which I diſcerned at a diſtance, and which I ſaw a great number of people enter, attracted my attention. I approached it, in order to know the reaſon of ſuch a great concourſe of men and women; and was ſoon ſatisfied, when I read theſe words, written in gold letters, on a ſtone of black marble placed over the gate, *La poſada des los repreſantes* *: and the players advertiſed in their bill, that they would that day, for the firſt time, act a new tragedy compoſed by Don Gabriel Triaquero.

CHAP. V.

GIL BLAS GOES TO THE PLAY, WHERE HE SEES A NEW TRAGEDY ACTED. THE SUCCESS OF THAT PERFORMANCE, WITH THE PUBLICK TASTE OF VALENCIA.

I Stopped ſome minutes at the door, to view the people who went in; and obſerved, that they conſiſted of all ranks. I ſaw cavaliers of a genteel mien, and richly dreſſed, and ſome figures as ordinary as the cloaths they wore. I perceived ladies of quality alight from their coaches, and go to the boxes, which they had ordered to be beſpoke; and female adventurers go in with a view of alluring cullies. This concourſe of all ſorts of ſpectators made me deſirous of encreaſing the number. Juſt as I was going to take a ticket, the governor and his lady arriving, diſcerned me in the crowd; and ordering me to be called, carried me into their box, where I placed myſelf behind them, ſo as to be able to ſpeak to both with eaſe. I found the houſe full of people from top to bottom, the pit very much thronged, and the ſtage loaded with knights of the three military orders. 'Here is,' ſaid I to Don Alphonſo, 'a very numerous aſſembly!'—'You muſt not be 'ſurprized at that,' anſwered he: 'the 'tragedy to be repreſented is the com'poſition of Don Gabriel Triaquero, 'ſirnamed, the *modiſh poet*. As ſoon as 'the play-bills advertiſed a new thing 'written by that author, the whole 'city of Valencia was in a flutter: 'the men as well as the women talk 'of nothing but this piece; all the 'boxes are beſpoke; and it being the 'firſt day of it's repreſentation, people 'are ſqueezed to death, endeavouring 'to enter; although every place is 'double filled except the pit, which 'they dare not diſoblige.'—'Such 'madneſs!' ſaid I to the governor: 'that eager curioſity of the publick, 'that furious impatience to ſee every 'new production of Gabriel, gives me 'an high idea of the poet's genius.'

In this part of our converſation the actors appeared; and we left off ſpeaking immediately, in order to liſten with attention. The applauſes began with the prologue; every verſe was attended with a *broubaha* †! and at the end of each act there was ſuch a clapping of hands, that one would have thought the houſe was falling. After the performance they ſhewed me the author, who went from box to box, modeſtly preſenting his head for the laurels with which the gentlemen and ladies prepared to crown him.

We returned to the governor's palace, where three or four knights arrived in a little time: thither alſo came two old authors, eſteemed in their way, with a gentleman from Madrid of underſtanding and taſte. As they had all been at the play, the whole converſation at ſupper turned upon the new piece. 'Gentlemen,' ſaid a knight of St. Jago, 'what is your opinion of 'this tragedy? Is it not what you call 'a finiſhed work? ſublime thoughts, 'tender ſentiments, manly verſification, deficient in nothing! in a word, 'it is a poem adapted to people of 'taſte!'—'I believe nobody can be of 'a contrary opinion,' ſaid the knight of Alcantara; 'the piece is full of 'ſtrokes that Apollo ſeems to have 'dictated, and of ſituations conceived 'with infinite art.—I appeal to this 'gentleman,' added he, addreſſing himſelf to the Caſtilian; 'he ſeems to 'be a connoiſſeur; and I'll wager he 'is of my ſentiment.'—'Don't wager, 'cavalier,' anſwered the gentleman, with a ſarcaſtick ſmile; 'we do not de'cide ſo haſtily at Madrid: far from 'judging

* The Theatre.

† A note of applauſe.

'judging a piece at it's firſt repreſenta-
'tion, we diſtruſt it's beauties while
'they are in the mouths of the actors;
'and how well ſoever we may be af-
'fected to the author, ſuſpend our
'judgment until we have read it:
'and truly it does not always give us
'the ſame pleaſure upon paper that we
'received from it on the ſtage. We
'ſcrupulouſly examine a poem before
'we eſteem it, without being dazzled
'by the author's reputation, how
'great ſoever it may be. When Lope
'de Vega himſelf, and Calderona *,
'produced new pieces, they found in
'their admirers ſevere judges, who
'would not raiſe them to the higheſt
'point of glory, until they judged
'them worthy of that elevation.'

'Zooks!' cried the knight of St. Jago; 'we are not ſo fearful as you:
'we don't wait until a piece is print-
'ed, but in the firſt repreſentation fix
'it's value: there is not even occaſion
'for our liſtening to it with great at-
'tention; if we know it to be a pro-
'duction of Don Gabriel, that is
'enough to convince us that it is with-
'out blemiſh. The works of that
'poet ought to ſerve as an epocha for
'the birth of taſte: your Lope's and
'Calderona's were but apprentices in
'compariſon of this great maſter of
'the ſtage!' The gentleman, who looked upon Lope and Calderona as the Spaniſh Sophocles and Euripides, was ſhocked at this raſh aſſertion. 'Such dramatick ſacrilege!' cried he. 'Since you oblige me, gentlemen, to
'judge, like you, from a firſt repre-
'ſentation, I muſt tell you, that I am
'not at all ſatisfied with this new tra-
'gedy of your Don Gabriel: it is
'ſtuffed with ſtrokes more ſhining than
'ſolid; three parts in four of the
'verſe are bad, or miſ-rhimed; the
'characters ill conceived, and ill ſup-
'ported; and the ſentiments are often
'very obſcure.'

The two authors who were at table, and who, through a reſerve as commendable as rare, had ſaid nothing, for fear of being ſuſpected of jealouſy, could not help applauding the gentleman's ſentiments with their eyes; which made me gueſs, that their ſilence was not ſo much owing to the perfection of the work, as to other prudential reaſons. As for the knights, they began again to praiſe Don Gabriel, whom they even placed among the gods. This extravagant apotheoſis, and blind idolatry, made the Caſtilian loſe all patience: he lifted up his hands to heaven, and all of a ſudden exclaimed, in a fit of enthuſiaſm, 'O
'divine Lope de Vega! rare and ſub-
'lime genius! who haſt left an im-
'menſe ſpace between thee and all the
'Gabriels who attempt to reach thy
'excellence!—and you, energetick
'Calderona! whoſe elegant ſoftneſs,
'purged of epick ſtiffneſs, is imimita-
'ble; do not fear that your altars will
'be demoliſhed by this new pupil of
'the muſes, who will be very lucky if
'poſterity, which you will delight, as
'you delight the preſent age, ſhall
'hear his name mentioned.'

This pleaſing apoſtrophe, which nobody expected, raiſed the laugh of the whole company, which got up from table, and parted. I was conducted, by Don Alphonſo's order, into an apartment prepared for me: there I found a good bed, in which my worſhip went to ſleep, deploring (like the Caſtilian gentleman) the injuſtice which ignorant people did to Lope and Calderona.

CHAP. VI.

GIL BLAS, WALKING THROUGH THE STREETS OF VALENCIA, MEETS A FRIAR WHOM HE THINKS HE KNOWS. AN ACCOUNT OF THAT FRIAR.

AS I had not ſeen the whole city in my firſt excurſion, I went out next day, with an intention to take another walk; and perceived in the ſtreet a Carthuſian friar, who, doubtleſs, was going to tranſact the affairs of his community. He walked with downcaſt eyes, and ſo devout an air, that he attracted the notice of every body. As he paſſed cloſe by me, I looked at him with attention, and thought I ſaw in him the very perſon of Don Raphael, that adventurer who maintains ſuch an honourable place in the two firſt volumes of my Memoirs.

I was ſo much aſtoniſhed, ſo ſtruck

* Don Pedro Calderona de la Barca, famous for the excellent comedies he has written.

with

pg: 320

Plate VIII.

Published as the Act directs by Harrison & Co. Feb.y 9th 1781.

with this meeting, that, inſtead of accoſting the monk, I ſtood immoveable ſome minutes; during which he was gone a good way from me. 'Juſt 'Heaven!' ſaid I; 'were ever two 'faces more alike! What muſt I think 'of this affair? Can it be Raphael in'deed? or can I doubt that it is he?' I was too curious to know the truth, to remain long where I was. I aſked the way to the monaſtery of the Carthuſians, whither I inſtantly repaired, in hopes of ſeeing my man again when he ſhould return, and firmly reſolved to ſtop and ſpeak with him. I had no occaſion to wait for this: when I came to the gate of the convent, another face of my acquaintance turned my doubts into certainty; I recollected in the porter my old valet Ambroſe de Lamela.

We were equally ſurprized to find one another in that place. 'Don't I 'dream!' ſaid I, ſaluting him; 'is it 'actually one of my friends whom I 'behold!' He could not recal me at firſt, or feigned himſelf ignorant of my features; but, conſidering that this feint was uſeleſs, he affected the air of a perſon who remembers a thing all of a ſudden: 'Ah, Signior Gil Blas!' cried he; 'forgive my want of memo'ry. Since I have lived in this holy 'place, and applied myſelf to fulfil the 'duties preſcribed by our rules, I loſe 'inſenſibly the remembrance of what I 'have ſeen in the world.'

'I am ſincerely rejoiced,' ſaid I, 'to 'ſee you, after an abſence of ten 'years, in ſuch a reverend dreſs.'—'And I,' he replied, 'am aſhamed to 'appear in it before a perſon who has 'been witneſs of the wicked life I led. 'This dreſs inceſſantly upbraids me. 'Alas!' added he, ſighing profoundly, 'to be worthy of wearing it, I 'ought to have lived always in inno'cence.'—'By this diſcourſe, with 'which I am charmed,' I reſumed, 'my dear brother, one may ſee that 'you have been touched by the finger 'of the Lord. I repeat the aſſurance 'of my joy at the occaſion; and long 'earneſtly to hear in what miracu'lous manner you and Don Raphael 'have entered into the right way; for 'I am perſuaded that it was he whom 'I juſt now met in the Carthuſian ha'bit. I am ſorry that I did not ſtop 'him in the ſtreet, and ſpeak to him; 'and I wait here for his return, in or'der to repair my neglect.'

'You are not miſtaken,' ſaid Lamela to me; 'it was Don Raphael 'himſelf whom you ſaw; and as to 'the detail you deſire, here it is. Af'ter we parted from you, near Segor'ba, the ſon of Lucinda and I took 'the road to Valencia, with a deſign 'of playing ſome new trick of our 'profeſſion in that city. One day, by 'accident, we went into the church of 'the Carthuſians, while the monks 'were ſinging pſalms in the choir. 'We conſidered them attentively, and 'experienced that even the wicked 'cannot help honouring virtue. We 'admired the fervour with which they 'prayed to God, their mortified air, 'their minds detached from the plea'ſures of the age, as well as the ſere'nity that reigned in their counte'nances, and ſo well expreſſed the re'poſe of their conſciences.

'While we made theſe obſervations, 'we fell into a reverie that became ve'ry ſalutary unto us. We compared 'our morals with thoſe of the good 'monks, and the difference which we 'found, filled us with ſorrow and diſ'quiet. "Lamela," ſaid Don Ra'phael to me, when we came out of 'the church, "how art thou affected "with what we have ſeen? For my "part, I cannot conceal from thee the "anxiety of my mind. I am agita"ted by emotions hitherto unknown "to me; and, for the firſt time of my "life, my conſcience upbraids me "with my iniquity."—"I am in the "ſelf-ſame diſpoſition," anſwered I; "the evil actions which I have com"mitted, at this inſtant riſe up againſt "me; and my heart, which was be"fore hardened againſt repentance, is "now torn with remorſe."—"Ah, "dear Ambroſe!" reſumed my com'rade, "we are two ſtrayed ſheep, "whom the Heavenly Father, through "pity, intends to bring back into the "fold. It is he, my child! it is he "who calls us! Let us not be deaf to "his voice; let us renounce cheat"ing, quit the libertiniſm in which "we live; and begin from this very "day to labour ſeriouſly in the great "work of our ſalvation. We muſt "ſpend the reſt of our days in this "convent, and conſecrate them to "piety and penitence."

'I ap-

'I applauded Raphael's ſentiment,' continued Brother Ambroſe; 'and we 'formed the generous reſolution of be-'coming Carthuſians. To put this in 'execution, we addreſſed ourſelves to 'the father prior, who no ſooner un-'derſtood our deſign, than, in order 'to prove our vocation, he accommo-'dated us with cells, and we were 'treated like monks during a whole 'year. We followed the rules with 'ſuch exactneſs and conſtancy, that 'we were received among the novices. 'We were ſo well ſatisfied with our 'ſituation, and ſo full of ardour, that 'we courageouſly underwent the toils 'of the noviciate; we then profeſſed; 'after which, Don Raphael appearing 'endued with a genius for buſineſs, 'was choſen aſſiſtant to an old father 'who was at that time ſolicitor. The 'ſon of Lucinda would have rather 'ſpent his whole time in prayer, but 'he was obliged to ſacrifice his incli-'nation to the good of the convent. 'He acquired ſuch a perfect know-'ledge of the intereſts of the houſe, 'that he was deemed capable of filling 'the place of the old ſolicitor, who 'died three years after. Don Ra-'phael actually exerciſes that employ-'ment at preſent, and acquits him-'ſelf in it to the great ſatisfaction of 'all our fathers, who praiſe his con-'duct very much in the adminiſtration 'of our temporalities. What is very 'ſurprizing is, that, in ſpite of the 'care of collecting our revenues, with 'which he is inveſted, he ſeems en-'groſſed by eternity alone; and when 'his buſineſs leaves him a moment to 'himſelf, he employs it in the moſt 'profound meditation. In a word, 'he is one of the holieſt monks in our 'monaſtery.'

In this place I interrupted Lamela with a tranſport of joy, that I expreſſ-ed at the ſight of Raphael, who arrived. 'There,' cried I, 'there is the holy 'ſolicitor for whom I waited ſo im-'patiently!' At the ſame time I ran up, and embraced him. He received my ſalutation with a good grace; and, without diſcovering the leaſt ſurprize at meeting, ſaid to me with a voice full of ſweetneſs, 'God be praiſed, Signior 'de Santillane! God be praiſed for 'the pleaſure I have in ſeeing you!'—'Truly,' I replied, 'my dear Ra-'phael, I ſhare as much as poſſible in 'your happineſs. Brother Ambroſe 'has recounted to me the hiſtory of 'your converſion, and I was charmed 'with the narration. What advantage 'have you both, my friends, in being 'able to flatter yourſelves, that you 'are of the ſmall number of the elect, 'who will one day enjoy eternal feli-'city!'

'Two wretches, ſuch as we are,' reſumed the ſon of Lucinda, with an air of great humility, 'ought not to 'conceive ſuch hopes; but the re-'pentance of ſinners makes them find 'favour with the Father of Mercy. 'And you, Signior Gil Blas,' added he, 'don't you alſo think of deſerving 'pardon for the crimes you have com-'mitted? What buſineſs brings you 'to Valencia? Don't you unhappily 'fill ſome dangerous employment in 'this place?'—'No, thank God!' I replied; 'ſince I quitted the court, I 'have led the life of an honeſt man. 'Sometimes, at an eſtate I have ſome 'leagues from hence, I enjoy the plea-'ſures of the country; and ſometimes 'I come to make merry with the Go-'vernor of Valencia, who is my friend, 'and one who you both know per-'fectly well.'

Then I recounted the hiſtory of Don Alphonſo de Leyva, to which they liſtened with attention; and when I told them that I had carried from that nobleman to Samuel Simon the three thouſand ducats which we had ſtole from him, Lamela interrupted me, and addreſſing himſelf to Raphael, 'Fa-'ther Hilary,' ſaid he, 'at that rate, 'the merchant has no cauſe to com-'plain of a robbery, for which he has 'received reſtitution with uſury; and 'we ought to have quiet conſciences 'on that article.'—'Really,' ſaid the ſolicitor, 'Brother Ambroſe and I, 'before we entered this convent, ſent 'privately fifteen hundred ducats to 'Samuel Simon by a worthy clergy-'man, who took the trouble of going 'to Xelva, in order to make that re-'ſtitution: ſo much the worſe for Sa-'muel, if he was capable of touching 'that ſum, after having been reimburſ-'ed of the whole by Signior de San-'tillane.'—'But,' ſaid I to them, 'are you ſure that your fifteen hun-'dred ducats were faithfully remitted

'to

'to him?'—'Queſtionleſs,' cried Don Raphael; 'I will anſwer for the clergyman's integrity, as much as for 'my own.'—'And I will join in the 'ſecurity,' ſaid Lamela; 'he is a holy prieſt, uſed to theſe ſorts of commiſſions, and has had, for things 'depoſited in his hands, two or three 'law-ſuits, which he gained with 'coſts.'

Our converſation laſted ſome time longer; then we parted, they exhorting me to have always the fear of the Lord before my eyes; and I recommending myſelf to their devout prayers. Going ſtraight to Don Alphonſo, 'You 'can't gueſs,' ſaid I to him, 'with 'whom I have had a long converſation! I have juſt parted with two 'venerable Carthuſians of your acquaintance, one called Father Hila'ry, and the other Brother Ambroſe.' —'You are miſtaken,' anſwered Don Alphonſo; 'I know not one Carthu'ſian.'—'Pardon me,' I replied; 'you ſaw at Xelva Brother Ambroſe 'commiſſary, and Father Hilary ſecre'tary to the Inquiſition.'—'Good 'Heaven!' cried the governor with ſurprize; 'is it poſſible that Ra'phael and Lamela are become Car'thuſians?'—'Yes, indeed,' ſaid I; 'they have been profeſſed monks 'ſome years. The firſt is ſolicitor, 'and the other porter of the con'vent.'

Don Cæſar's ſon muſed ſome minutes, then ſhaking his head, 'Mr. 'Commiſſary of the Inquiſition and 'his ſecretary,' ſaid he, 'are, in my 'opinion, bent upon playing ſome 'new farce here.'—'You are preju'diced againſt them,' anſwered I. 'For my own part, having converſed 'with them, I judge more favourably 'of their intentions. It is true, we 'cannot dive into the heart; but, in 'all appearance, they are two con'verted ſinners.'—'That may be,' reſumed Don Alphonſo; 'there have 'been many libertines, who, after hav'ing ſcandalized the world by their 'irregularities, ſhut themſelves up in 'cloyſters, to perform a rigorous pe'nance, and I wiſh our two monks 'may be of that ſort.'—'Why ſhould 'they not?' ſaid I: 'they have vo'luntarily embraced a monaſtick life, 'and have already lived a long time 'like good friars.'—'You may ſay 'what you pleaſe,' replied the governor; 'I don't like that the convent's 'caſh ſhould be in the hands of that 'ſame Father Hilary, whoſe integrity 'I cannot help diſtruſting. When I 'remember that fine detail he gave us 'of his adventures, I tremble for the 'Carthuſians. I would willingly be'lieve with you, that he has taken 'the habit from a very pious motive, 'but the ſight of the caſh may awaken 'his cupidity. A reformed drunkard 'ſhould never be left in a cellar.'

The ſuſpicion of Don Alphonſo was fully juſtified in a few days. Father Solicitor and Brother Porter diſappeared with the caſh. This piece of news, which was immediately ſpread all over the city, afforded great mirth to the wits, who always rejoice at the misfortunes which happen to endowed monks. As for the governor and me, we pitied the Carthuſians, without boaſting of our acquaintance with the two apoſtles.

CHAP. VII.

GIL BLAS RETURNS TO HIS CASTLE OF LIRIAS; HEARS AN AGREEABLE PIECE OF NEWS FROM SCIPIO; AND MAKES A REFORM IN HIS HOUSEKEEPING.

I Spent eight days at Valencia in high taſte, living among counts and marquiſſes. Shews, balls, concerts, entertainments, converſations with the ladies, and other amuſements, I enjoyed by the favour of the governor and his lady, to whom I paid my court ſo ſucceſsfully, that, when I ſet out for Lirias, they were ſorry to part with me. They even obliged me to promiſe, that I would divide my time between them and my ſolitude; and it was agreed, that I ſhould live at Valencia in the winter, and ſpend the ſummer at my own houſe. This convention being made, my benefactors gave me liberty to go and enjoy their favours.

Scipio, who impatiently expected my return, was overjoyed at ſeeing me; and I redoubled his pleaſure by a faithful report of my journey. 'Well, 'my friend,' ſaid I to him afterwards, 'how didſt thou ſpend the day in my 'abſence? didſt thou divert thyſelf

'agreeably?' — 'As well,' anſwered he, 'as a ſervant could, to whom no-'thing is ſo dear as the preſence of 'his maſter. I have walked all over 'our ſmall territories. Sometimes ſeat-'ed on the brink of that fountain 'which is in our wood, I took plea-'ſure in contemplating the beauty of 'it's waters, which are as pure as 'thoſe of the ſacred fountain, that 'makes the vaſt foreſt of Albuna echo 'with it's noiſe; and ſometimes, 'ſtretched at the root of a tree, heard 'the linnets ſing, and the nightin-'gales tune their ſong. In ſhort, I 'have hunted, I have fiſhed; and what 'gave me more ſatisfaction than all 'other amuſements, I have read ſeve-'ral books as uſeful as entertaining.'

I interrupted my ſecretary with precipitation, to aſk where he found theſe books. 'I found them,' ſaid he, 'in a 'handſome library, which Maſter Joa-'chim ſhewed me in this caſtle.'—'Ha! 'in what part,' ſaid I, 'can this pre-'tended library be? Did we not viſit 'the whole houſe on the firſt day of 'our arrival?'—'So you imagined,' anſwered he; 'but you muſt know we 'ſurveyed three pavilions only, and 'forgot the fourth, where Don Cæ-'ſar, when he came to Lirias, uſually 'employed a part of his time in read-'ing. There are in this library ex-'ceeding good books left for you, as 'an aſſured entertainment, when our 'gardens, ſtripped of their flowers, 'and our woods of their leaves, ſhall 'have nothing left to amuſe us. The 'noblemen of Leyva have not done 'things by halves, but provided food 'for the mind, as well as for the 'body.'

Truly rejoiced at this piece of news, I followed him into the fourth pavilion, which preſented a very agreeable ſcene to my view. I beheld a chamber, which from that hour I deſtined to be my apartment, as it had been Don Cæſar's. The bed of that nobleman was ſtill there, together with all the reſt of the furniture; that is, a tapeſtry with figures repreſenting the rape of the Sabine women. From this room I went into a cloſet, ſurrounded with low preſſes filled with books, over which appeared the portraits of all our kings. There was alſo hard by a window, from whence we had a view of a moſt delightful country, and an ebony bureau ſtanding before a large ſopha, covered with black moroquin. But I beſtowed my chief attention upon the library, which was compoſed of philoſophy, poetry, hiſtory, and a great number of romances on the ſubject of knight-errantry. I concluded that Don Cæſar loved this laſt kind of writing, ſince he had made ſuch plentiful proviſion of it. I muſt confeſs, to my ſhame, that I was no leſs pleaſed with theſe productions, notwithſtanding all the extravagancies with which they are interwoven; whether it was owing to my being at that time no very conſiderate reader, or that Spaniards in general are too much captivated by the marvellous. I will ſay, nevertheleſs, that I took more pleaſure in ſprightly books of morality; and that Lucian, Horace, and Eraſmus, became my favourite authors.

'Friend,' ſaid I to Scipio, when I had ſurveyed my library, 'here is a-'muſement indeed; but our preſent 'buſineſs is to retrench our houſe-'keeping.' — 'I will ſpare you that 'taſk,' anſwered he. 'During your 'abſence, I have ſtudied your people, 'and now may boaſt of knowing them 'perfectly well. Let us begin with 'Maſter Joachim, who, I believe, is 'a compleat rogue, and I don't doubt 'that he was turned out of the arch-'biſhop's ſervice for having committed 'arithmetical blunders in his accounts. 'Nevertheleſs, we muſt keep him for 'two reaſons; the firſt is, becauſe he 'is a good cook; and the ſecond, be-'cauſe I ſhall always have an eye 'over him: I will be a ſpy upon his 'actions; and he muſt be as cunning 'as the devil if he be able to deceive 'me. I have already told him, that 'you intend to diſmiſs three-fourths 'of your ſervants; a piece of news 'that gave him ſome pain; and he 'aſſured me, that, feeling an inclina-'tion to ſerve you, he would, rather 'than leave the houſe, be contented 'with the half of his preſent wages; 'a circumſtance which makes me ſu-'ſpect that there is ſome girl in the 'village from whom he would not 'willingly remove. As for the cook's 'aſſiſtant,' added he, 'he is a drunk-'ard; and the porter an inſolent fel-'low, for whom we have not the leaſt 'occaſion, any more than for the fowl-'er; I can eaſily fill up the place of

'this

'this laſt, as I will ſhew you to-mor-
'row, ſince we have plenty of fuſils,
'powder, and ſhot. With regard to
'the lacquies, there is one of them
'from Arragon, ſeemingly a good lad,
'him we will keep; the reſt are ſuch
'rogues, that I would not adviſe you
'to retain them, even if you wanted
'an hundred valets.'

Having maturely deliberated on this affair, we reſolved to keep the cook, ſcullion, Arragonian footman, and rid ourſelves honourably of the reſt. This was executed that very day, by means of ſome piſtoles, which Scipio took from the ſtrong-box, and divided among them by my order. When he had made this reformation, we eſtabliſhed a certain order in the houſe, regulated the office of each domeſtick, and began to live at our own expence. I would have been contented with a frugal ordinary; but my ſecretary, who loved ragouts and dainties, was not the man to leave Maſter Joachim's ſkill unemployed. He kept him ſo well at work, that our dinners and ſuppers might have ſerved a company of Bernardine monks.

CHAP. VIII.

THE AMOURS OF GIL BLAS AND THE FAIR ANTONIA.

TWO days after my return from Valencia to Lirias, Baſil the labourer, my farmer, came in the morning to aſk leave to preſent Antonia his daughter, who, he ſaid, wanted to have the honour of ſaluting her new maſter. I told him, that it would give me great pleaſure; upon which he went out, and returned ſoon after with the fair Antonia: I think I may give that epithet to a maid of ſixteen or eighteen years, who, with the moſt regular features, poſſeſſed the faireſt complexion and fineſt eyes in the world. Though ſhe was clad in a ſtuff gown, her rich air, majeſtick port and graces, that do not always accompany youth, dignified the ſimplicity of her dreſs. She wore no cap on her head, her hair being tied up behind with a knot of flowers, in the manner of the Lacedæmonian women. When ſhe entered my chamber, I was as much ſtruck with her beauty as the knights of Charlemaign's court with the charms of Angelica. Inſtead of receiving Antonia with eaſe, and ſaying kind things to her; inſtead of congratulating the father on his happineſs in having ſuch a charming daughter, I ſtood confounded, aſtoniſhed, and mute. Scipio, who perceived my diſorder, ſpoke in my room, and was at the expence of thoſe praiſes which I owed to that lovely creature. As for her part, not at all dazzled by my figure, in my morning gown and cap, ſhe ſaluted me without any concern, and made me a compliment, which, though uncommon, enchanted my affection. In the mean time, while my ſecretary, Baſil and his daughter, were employed in mutual civilities, I recollected myſelf; and, to make amends for the ſtupid ſilence I had hitherto kept, paſſed from one extremity to another, launched out into gallant diſcourſe, and ſpoke with ſo much vivacity, that I alarmed Baſil, who, looking upon me already as a man who would put every thing in practice to ſeduce Antonia, went out of my apartment with her in a hurry, reſolved, perhaps, to withdraw her from my eyes for ever.

Scipio, ſeeing himſelf alone with me, ſaid, with a ſmile, 'Here is ano-
'ther reſource againſt the tedious
'hours. I did not know that your
'farmer had ſuch a handſome daugh-
'ter, having never before ſeen her,
'though I have been twice at her fa-
'ther's houſe: he muſt be at great
'pains to conceal her; and I commend
'his care. Egad, ſhe's a delicate
'morſel! But,' added he, 'I believe
'I need not ſay ſo to you, who were
'dazzled by her at firſt ſight.'—'I
'don't deny it,' anſwered I. 'Ah!
'my child, I thought I ſaw a celeſtial
'ſubſtance. She inflamed me all of
'a ſudden, and pierced my heart with
'an arrow ſwift as lightning.'

'I am raviſhed,' replied my ſecretary, 'to learn, that you are at laſt
'in love. You wanted a miſtreſs to
'make you enjoy perfect happineſs in
'your ſolitude. Thank Heaven! you
'have now all ſorts of conveniences!
'I know,' continued he, 'that we ſhall
'have ſome difficulty in deceiving the
'vigilance of Baſil; but leave that to
'me: I undertake, in three days, to
'procure for you a private interview
'with Antonia.'—'Mr. Scipio,' ſaid

I, 'perhaps you might not be able to 'keep your promiſe; but that is not 'what I am curious to try. I have 'no intention to tempt the virtue of 'that girl, who ſeems to deſerve that 'I ſhould entertain other ſentiments 'of her. Wherefore, far from exact-'ing of your zeal that you ſhould 'aſſiſt me in diſhonouring her, I am 'reſolved, by your mediation, to 'eſpouſe her, provided her heart is not 'engaged to another.'—'I did not 'expect,' ſaid he, 'to ſee you take 'ſuch a ſudden reſolution to marry. 'Many country gentlemen in your 'place would not deal ſo honourably; 'they would never entertain legitimate 'views with regard to Antonia, until 'they had tried others to no purpoſe. 'But, however,' added he, 'don't 'imagine that I condemn your love, 'and ſeek to diſſuade you from your 'deſign. Your farmer's daughter de-'ſerves the honour you intend for her, 'if ſhe can beſtow upon you a heart 'unengaged, and ſenſible of your ge-'neroſity. This I muſt inform my-'ſelf of to-day, in a converſation with 'the father, and perhaps with herſelf.'

My confident, who was a punctual man in performing his promiſes, went privately to viſit Baſil; and in the evening came to me in my cloſet, where I waited with impatience mingled with fear. Drawing a good omen from his chearful look, 'If I may believe,' ſaid I, 'that ſmile on thy face, thou comeſt 'to ſignify, that I ſhall ſoon enjoy my 'wiſh.'—'Yes, my dear maſter,' he replied; 'every thing is propitious to 'you. I have had a converſation 'with Baſil and his daughter, to whom 'I declared your intention. The fa-'ther is overjoyed to hear your deſign 'to be his ſon-in-law; and I can aſ-'ſure you, that you are very much 'to Antonia's taſte.'—'O Heaven!' cried I, in a tranſport of joy; 'what! 'am I ſo happy as to be agreeable to 'that lovely creature!'—'Doubtleſs,' he reſumed. 'She already loves you. I 'have not, indeed, drawn that con-'feſſion from her mouth; but I am 'convinced of her paſſion, by the 'gaiety ſhe diſcovered when ſhe under-'ſtood your deſign. Nevertheleſs,' added he, 'you have a rival.'—'A 'rival!' cried I, changing colour. 'You need not be much alarmed,' ſaid he; 'that rival will not rob you of the 'heart of your miſtreſs; he is no other 'than Maſter Joachim your cook.'—'Ah! the hang-dog!' ſaid I, burſt-ing into a fit of laughter; 'this was 'his reaſon for ſhewing ſuch reluctance 'to quit my ſervice.'—'The very 'ſame,' anſwered Scipio. 'He ſome 'days ago demanded Antonia in mar-'riage, and met with a polite refuſal.' —'With deference to thy better ad-'vice,' I reſumed, 'methinks it will 'be proper to rid ourſelves of the 'rogue, before he can get notice that 'I intend to marry Baſil's daughter; 'a cook, thou knoweſt, is a dange-'rous rival.'—'You are in the right,' replied my confident: 'we muſt clear 'the houſe of him. I will give him 'his leave to-morrow morning before 'he begins to work, and then you 'ſhall have nothing to fear either from 'his ſauces or his love. I am ſorry, 'however, to loſe ſuch an excellent 'cook; but I ſacrifice my palate to 'your ſafety.'—'Thou needeſt not 'regret him ſo much,' ſaid I; 'the 'loſs is not irreparable: I will ſend to 'Valencia for a cook as good as he.' And indeed I wrote immediately to Don Alphonſo, that I had occaſion for a cook; and the very next day he ſent one who conſoled Scipio at once.

Although the zealous ſecretary had told me, that he perceived Antonia was pleaſed in her heart with the con-queſt which ſhe had made of her maſter, I durſt not depend upon his report, being apprehenſive that he might have been deceived by falſe appear-ances. To be more ſure of the mat-ter, I reſolved to ſpeak in perſon to the fair Antonia; and, repairing to Baſil's houſe, confirmed what my am-baſſador had told him. That honeſt peaſant, a man of frankneſs and ſimpli-city, having heard my deſign, aſſured me, that he would beſtow his daugh-ter upon me with the utmoſt ſatisfac-tion: 'But,' added he, 'don't think 'that it is on account of your being 'lord of the manor. Were you ſtill 'no more than the ſteward of Don 'Cæſar and Don Alphonſo, I would 'prefer you to all the other ſuitors 'who preſent themſelves. I have al-'ways had a regard for you; and 'what gives me the moſt concern is, 'that Antonia cannot bring you a 'large fortune.'—'I aſk nothing with 'her,' ſaid I; 'her perſon is all the

'wealth

'wealth to which I aſpire.'—'Your 'moſt humble ſervant!' cried he; 'that 'is not my intention: I am not ſuch 'a beggar, as to marry my daughter 'in that manner. Baſil de Buenotrigo is in a condition, thank God, 'to give her a dowry; and, for every 'dinner you beſtow upon her, ſhe 'ſhall afford a ſupper to you. In a 'word, the rent of your eſtate, which 'is but five hundred ducats, ſhall amount to a thouſand by virtue of this 'marriage.'

'You ſhall do in that as you pleaſe, 'my dear Baſil,' I replied; 'we ſhall 'have no diſputes about intereſt: and 'now that we are agreed, the ſole 'buſineſs is to obtain the conſent of 'your daughter.'—'You have mine,' ſaid he; 'and that is enough.'—'Not 'altogether,' anſwered I; 'if yours 'is neceſſary, her's is ſo too.'—'Her's 'depends upon me,' ſaid he: 'I would 'fain ſee her refuſe!'—'Antonia,' I reſumed, 'ſubmiſſive to paternal au'thority, is ready, without doubt, to 'obey you implicitly; but I don't 'know if ſhe can do it upon this occa'ſion without reluctance; and if ſhe 'can't, I ſhould never be conſoled 'for having made her unhappy; in 'ſhort, it is not enough for me to ob'tain her hand of you, unleſs her 'heart goes to the bargain.'—'By'r 'lady!' ſaid Baſil; 'I don't under'ſtand all this philoſophy: ſpeak your'ſelf to Antonia, and you ſhall ſee, if 'I am not miſtaken, that ſhe deſires 'no better than to be your wife.' So ſaying, he called his daughter, and left me alone with her for a minute or two.

That I might enjoy the precious opportunity, I came to the point at once. 'Fair Antonia,' ſaid I, 'deter'mine my fate. Although I have 'your father's conſent, don't think 'that I intend to avail myſelf of it, 'in doing violence to your inclination. 'Charming as it is, I renounce the 'poſſeſſion of you, if you ſay that I 'muſt owe it to your obedience only.'—'That is what I will not ſay,' anſwered ſhe: 'your addreſſes are too 'agreeable to give me pain; and, in'ſtead of murmuring, I approve of 'my father's choice. I don't know,' continued ſhe, 'whether I do well or 'ill in talking thus: but if you was 'diſagreeable to me, I ſhould be frank 'enough to own it; why then may I 'not ſay the contrary with the ſame 'freedom?'

At theſe words, which I could not hear without being charmed, I kneeled before Antonia; and, in the exceſs of my joy, ſeizing one of her fair hands, kiſſed it with the utmoſt tenderneſs and paſſion. 'My dear An'tonia,' ſaid I, 'I am enchanted with 'your frankneſs: continue the ſame 'unconſtrained behaviour; and, as you 'ſpeak to your huſband, diſcloſe your 'whole ſoul to his view. May I then 'flatter myſelf, that you will be pleaſ'ed to ſee your fortune joined to 'mine?' Baſil coming in at that inſtant, hindered me from proceeding. Impatient to know his daughter's anſwer, and ready to grumble had ſhe ſhewn the leaſt averſion for me, 'Well,' ſaid he, 'are you ſatisfied with Anto'nia?'—'I am ſo well ſatisfied with 'her,' anſwered I, 'that I will, this 'very moment, go and make prepa'rations for my marriage.' So ſaying, I took my leave of the father and daughter, to go and conſult with my ſecretary on that ſubject.

CHAP. IX.

THE MANNER IN WHICH THE NUPTIALS OF GIL BLAS AND THE FAIR ANTONIA WERE CELEBRATED; AND THE REJOICINGS WITH WHICH THEY WERE ATTENDED.

ALTHOUGH I was under no neceſſity of obtaining the permiſſion of the noblemen of Leyva, Scipio and I concluded, that we could not, in honour, omit imparting to them my deſign of marrying Baſil's daughter, and of aſking their conſent, out of good manners.

I ſet out immediately for Valencia, where they were as much ſurprized to ſee me as to hear the cauſe of my journey. Don Cæſar and his ſon having ſeen Antonia more than once, congratulated me on my choice. Don Cæſar, eſpecially, complimented me upon it with ſuch vivacity, that if I had not believed him to be a man quite weaned from certain amuſements, I ſhould have ſuſpected that he had gone ſometimes to Lirias to ſee his farmer's daughter, rather

rather than to viſit his own houſe. Seraphina, after having aſſured me that ſhe would always bear a large part in what ſhould concern me, ſaid ſhe had heard a very good character of Antonia: 'But,' added ſhe with a ſatirical look, as if ſhe reproached me for the indifference with which I repaid Sephora's paſſion, 'if I had not heard 'her beauty extolled, I ſhould depend 'upon your taſte, the delicacy of 'which I know.'

Don Cæſar and his ſon not only approved of my marriage, but declared that they would defray the whole expence of it. 'Go back to Lirias,' ſaid they, 'and make yourſelf eaſy, 'until you hear from us. Make no 'preparation for your nuptials, but 'leave that to our care.' In compliance with their deſire, I returned to my houſe, and making Baſil and his daughter acquainted with the intention of our patrons, we waited their orders as patiently as we could. During eight days, however, we received none: but, to make amends, on the ninth, a coach and four arrived full of mantua-makers, and rich ſtuffs for the bride's cloaths, and eſcorted by ſeveral men in livery mounted on mules. One of them brought a letter for me, from Don Alphonſo, importing, that he would be at Lirias next day, with his father and ſpouſe, and that the ceremony of my marriage ſhould be celebrated on the day following by the Grand Vicar of Valencia. Accordingly Don Cæſar, his ſon, and Seraphina, did not fail to come with that clergyman, all four together, in a coach and ſix, preceded by another drawn by four, in which were Seraphina's women, attended by the governor's guards.

My lady governeſs was ſcarce arrived, when ſhe expreſſed the utmoſt impatience to ſee Antonia, who on her part, no ſooner underſtood that Seraphina was alighted, than ſhe ran to ſalute her, and kiſſed her hand with ſuch a good grace, that all the company admired her politeneſs. 'Well, Madam,' ſaid Don Cæſar to his daughter-in-law, 'what do you think of Antonia? 'Could Santillane have made a better 'choice?'—'No, indeed,' replied Seraphina; 'they are worthy of each 'other; and I don't doubt that their 'union will be perfectly happy.' In ſhort, every one praiſed the bride; and if ſhe was much applauded in her country garb, every body was charmed with her when ſhe appeared in a richer dreſs. Her air was ſo noble, and her deportment ſo eaſy, that one would have thought ſhe had never wore any other.

The moment being arrived in which propitious Hymen was to join my fate to her's, Don Alphonſo taking me by the hand, led me to the altar, while Seraphina did the ſame honour to the bride. In this order we repaired to the village-chapel, where the vicar attended to marry us; and that ceremony was performed amidſt the acclamations of the inhabitants of Lirias, and all the rich farmers in the neighbourhood, whom Baſil had invited to Antonia's wedding, with their daughters, dreſſed in ribbands and flowers, holding tabors in their hands. We then returned to my houſe; where, by the care of Scipio, who was contriver of the feaſt, we found three tables covered, one for the noblemen, another for their attendants, and the third, which was the largeſt, for the reſt of the gueſts. Antonia ſat at the firſt, by deſire of the lady governeſs; I did the honours of the ſecond; and Baſil took care of the third. As for Scipio, he did not ſit, but went from one table to another, employing himſelf in ſerving and ſatisfying every individual.

As the entertainment was prepared by the governor's cooks, it could not fail of being compleat in all it's parts. The good wines, of which Maſter Joachim had made ample proviſion, were drank with profuſion; the gueſts began to wax warm, and mirth and jollity reigned, when we were, all of a ſudden, interrupted by an incident that alarmed me. My ſecretary being in the hall, where I ſat at table with the principal officers of Don Alphonſo, and Seraphina's women, fell down upon the floor, without ſenſe or motion. I ran to his aſſiſtance, and while I was buſied in bringing him to himſelf again, one of the women fainted away. All the company concluded, that there muſt be ſome myſtery in this double ſwooning, as it actually concealed one, which, in a little time, was explained; for ſoon after Scipio recovered his ſpirits, and ſaid ſoftly to me, 'Why 'ſhould the happieſt of your days be

'the

'the moſt diſagreeable of mine! It is 'impoſſible for one to ſhun his deſtiny,' added he; 'I have found my wife in the 'perſon of one of Seraphina's maids.'

'What do I hear!' cried I; 'that 'is not poſſible! what, art thou the 'huſband of the lady who was taken 'ill at the ſame time with thee?'—'—'Yes, Sir,' he replied, 'I am her 'huſband; and Fortune, I ſwear, 'could not play me a more villainous 'trick than that of bringing her to my 'view.'—'I don't know, my friend,' ſaid I, 'what reaſon thou haſt to com-'plain of thy wife; but, whatever 'cauſe ſhe may have given thee, pray 'conſtrain thyſelf; if thou loveſt me, 'do not diſturb this entertainment by 'ſhewing thy reſentment.'—'You 'ſhall be ſatisfied with my behaviour,' replied Scipio, 'and ſee whether or 'not I can diſſemble.'

So ſaying, he went up to his wife, who, by the aſſiſtance of her companions, was alſo recovered, and embracing her with the appearance of as much paſſion as if he had been raviſhed to ſee her again; 'Ah, my dear 'Beatrice!' ſaid he, 'Heaven unites 'us again, after ten years of ſepara-'tion: O happy moment for me!'—'I don't know,' anſwered his wife, 'whether or not you feel any joy in 'meeting me here; but this I am cer-'tain of, I gave you no juſt cauſe to 'leave me. What! you found me 'one night with Signior Don Fer-'nando de Leyva, who was in love 'with my miſtreſs Julia, and whoſe 'paſſion I aſſiſted; and you took it in 'your head, that I liſtened to him, at 'the expence of your and my honour; 'thereupon jealouſy turned your brain, 'you quitted Toledo, and fled from 'me as from a monſter, without deign-'ing to come to an explanation! 'Which of us two, if you pleaſe, has 'the moſt reaſon to complain?'—'You, to be ſure,' replied Scipio. 'Yes, doubtleſs,' ſaid ſhe. 'Don 'Fernando, ſoon after your departure 'from Toledo, married Julia, with 'whom I ſtayed as long as ſhe lived; 'and ſince we are robbed of her, by an 'untimely death, I have been in the 'ſervice of my lady her ſiſter, who, as 'well as her women, can anſwer for 'the purity of my morals.'

My ſecretary, at this diſcourſe, the falſity of which he could not prove, behaved as became him. 'Once more,' ſaid he to his wife, 'I own my fault, 'and aſk pardon before this honourable 'aſſembly.' Then I, interceding for him, begged that Beatrice would forget what was paſt; aſſuring her, that, for the future, her huſband's ſole ſtudy ſhould be to give her ſatisfaction. She yielded to my entreaty, and the whole company applauded their re-union; for the better celebration of which they were made to ſit by one another, their health was toaſted, every body complimented them, and the feaſt ſeemed to have been made rather on account of their reconciliation than of my nuptials.

The third table was the firſt forſaken. The young peaſants got up to dance with the country maids; who, by the noiſe of their tabors, ſoon brought the company from the other rooms, and inſpired them with the deſire of following their example. Every body was now in motion; the governor's officers began to dance with the attendants of my lady governeſs; the noblemen themſelves mingled in the diverſion. Don Alphonſo danced a ſaraband with Seraphina. Don Cæſar performed with Antonia, who came afterwards and took me out, acquitting herſelf very well, conſidering that ſhe had only received a few leſſons in the houſe of a relation, who was the wife of a citizen of Albarazin. As for me, who had learned in the houſe of the Marchioneſs of Chaves, the aſſembly looked upon me as a great dancer. With regard to Beatrice and Scipio, they preferred a private converſation to dancing, and gave each other an account of what had happened to them ſince their parting; but they were interrupted by Seraphina, who, being informed of their meeting, ſent for them to expreſs her joy at their reconciliation. 'My children,' ſaid ſhe, 'on this day of rejoicing, it is an ad-'dition to my ſatisfaction, to ſee you 'reſtored to each other. Friend Sci-'pio, I give you back your ſpouſe, 'and proteſt to you, that her conduct 'has always been irreproachable: you 'may live here happily together; and 'you, Beatrice, attach yourſelf to 'Antonia, and be as much devoted to 'her, as your huſband is to Signior 'de Santillane.' Scipio, after this, could not help looking upon his wife

as

as another Penelope, and promiſed to treat her with all imaginable affection.

The young peaſants and their partners having danced all day, retired to their houſes; but the feſtival was continued at the caſtle, where a magnificent ſupper was prepared; and when it was time to go to reſt, the grand vicar bleſſed the nuptial bed: Seraphina undreſſed the bride, and the noblemen of Leyva did me the ſame honour. What was merry enough, the officers of Don Alphonſo, and the ladies of the governeſs, took in their heads to perform the ſame ceremony to Beatrice and Scipio; who, to make the ſcene more comical, very gravely allowed themſelves to be ſtripped and put to bed.

CHAP. X.

WHAT FOLLOWED THE MARRIAGE OF GIL BLAS AND THE FAIR ANTONIA. THE BEGINNING OF SCIPIO'S HISTORY.

ON the very next day after my marriage, the lords of Leyva returned to Valencia, after having given me a thouſand new marks of friendſhip; ſo that my ſecretary and I remained in the houſe, with our wives and ſervants only.

The care which both of us took to pleaſe the ladies was not ineffectual; in a little time, I inſpired my wife with as much love for me as I had for her; and Scipio made his ſpouſe forget the ſorrows which he had made her ſuffer. Beatrice, who had a pliant obliging temper, eaſily inſinuated herſelf into the favour, and gained the confidence of her miſtreſs. In ſhort, we agreed, all four, to admiration, and began to enjoy a ſituation worthy of envy. All our days glided away in the moſt agreeable amuſements. Antonia was naturally grave, but Beatrice and I were very gay; and had we been otherwiſe, Scipio's preſence was enough to keep off melancholy. He was an incomparable fellow for ſociety, one of thoſe comical creatures whoſe appearance alone can make a company merry.

One day, that we took a whim after dinner to go and take a ſieſta in the moſt agreeable place of the wood, my ſecretary was in ſuch good-humour, that he baniſhed all deſire of ſleeping by his merry diſcourſe. 'Hold 'thy tongue, friend,' ſaid I; 'or if 'thou art reſolved to keep us from 'taking our nap, entertain us with 'ſome ſtory worthy our attention.'

'With all my heart, Sir,' anſwered he; 'ſhall I recount the hiſtory 'of King Pelagius*?'—'I would 'rather hear thy own,' I replied; 'but 'that is a pleaſure thou haſt not thought 'proper to give me, ſince we lived together, nor ever will, I ſuppoſe.'—'And what is the reaſon?' ſaid he. 'If I have not recounted my own 'hiſtory, it was becauſe you never expreſſed the leaſt deſire to hear it: it 'is not, therefore, my fault that you 'are ignorant of my adventures; and 'if you are in the leaſt curious to 'know them, I am ready to ſatisfy 'your curioſity.' Antonia, Beatrice, and I, took him at his word, and diſpoſed ourſelves in order to hear his narration, which could not miſs of having a good effect, either in diverting, or lulling us aſleep.

'Had it depended upon me,' ſaid Scipio, 'I ſhould have been the ſon 'of ſome grandee, or knight of Al'cantara at leaſt; but as one does not 'chuſe his own father, you muſt know 'that mine was an honeſt ſoldier of 'the Holy Brotherhood, Torribio 'Scipio by name. While he was 'travelling to and fro on the high'way, where his profeſſion obliged 'him almoſt always to be, he met by 'accident one day, between Cuença 'and Toledo, a young gypſey whom 'he thought very handſome. She 'was alone on foot, and carried her 'whole fortune in a kind of knapſack 'on her back. "Which way do you "go, my dear?" ſaid he to her, ſoft'ening his voice, which was naturally 'rough. "Signior Cavalier," anſwered ſhe, "I am going to Toledo, "where I hope to gain an honeſt live"lihood, in ſome ſhape or other."—"That is a laudable intention," he

* Pelagius reigned in the eighth century, and was ſome time in ſubjection to the Saracens; but putting himſelf at the head of the Chriſtians, and being declared king, took arms againſt the Infidels, whom he vanquiſhed, and laid the foundation of the kingdom of Leon, in which he reigned twenty years.

'reſumed,

pa: 330

Plate III.

Published as the Act directs by Harrison & Co. Jan.y 6.th 1781.

" resumed, " and I don't doubt that " you have more strings than one " to your bow."—" Yes, thank " God," said she; " I have more ta- " lents than one; I can compose po- " matums and essences for the ladies; " I tell fortunes; turn the sieve to find " things that are lost; and shew all " that people want to see in a glass or " mirror."

' Torribio, concluding that such a ' girl would be a very advantageous ' match for him, who could scarce live ' by his employment, though he was ' very dexterous at it, offered to marry ' her: she accepted the proposal, and ' they repaired with all diligence to ' Toledo, where they were wedded; ' and you see in me the worthy fruit ' of these noble nuptials. They settled ' in the suburbs, where my mother ' began to sell pomatums and essences; ' but that trade not answering, she ' became fortune-teller. It was then ' that she saw the crowns and pistoles ' shower upon her! a thousand dupes ' of both sexes soon raised the repu- ' tation of Coscolina, which was the ' gipsey's name. Somebody came e- ' very day, to beg she would employ ' her ministry for him: sometimes a ' needy nephew, who wanted to know ' when his uncle, whose sole heir he ' was, would set out for the other ' world; and sometimes a girl, wish- ' ing to know if a certain cavalier, to ' whom she had granted the favour on ' promise of marriage, would keep ' his word.

' Please to observe, that my mother's ' predictions were always favourable ' to those who solicited them: if they ' proved true, good and well; but ' when they came back to reproach ' her, because the contrary of what ' she had prophesied came to pass, she ' answered coldly, that they must at- ' tribute it to the demon; who, not- ' withstanding the force of the con- ' jurations that she employed to make ' him reveal what would happen, was ' sometimes so malicious as to deceive ' her.

' When my mother, for the honour ' of her profession, thought she must ' make the devil appear in her opera- ' tions, Torribio Scipio always acted ' that part, which he performed per- ' fectly well; the roughness of his ' voice, and ugliness of his face, ' giving him an appearance suitable ' to the character which he represent- ' ed. Those that were in the least ti- ' morous, were always terrified by my ' father's figure. But one day, un- ' fortunately, there came a brutal ' fellow of a captain to see the devil, ' whom he ran through the body. ' The Holy Office, informed of the ' devil's death, sent it's officers to the ' house of Coscolina, whom they seiz- ' ed with all her effects; and I, who ' was then but seven years old, was put ' into the hospital of *Los Ninos* *. ' There were in that house charitable ' clergymen; who, being well paid ' for the education of poor orphans, ' were at the trouble of teaching them ' to read and write. They looked ' upon me as a promising child, and ' on that account distinguished me ' from the rest, by chusing me to run ' on their errands. They sent me ' into the city with letters and mes- ' sages; and I made the responses at ' mass. By way of recompence, they ' undertook to teach me the Latin ' tongue; but they behaved so rudely, ' and treated me with such rigour, ' notwithstanding the small services I ' did them, that, being no longer able ' to bear it, I ran away one morning ' early when I was sent out on an er- ' rand; and, far from returning to ' the hospital, quitted Toledo by the ' suburbs that lie on the Seville side ' of the city. Though I was scarce ' yet nine years old, I felt a sensible ' pleasure in being free, and master of ' my own actions. I was without mo- ' ney, and without food; but what ' did that signify? I had no lessons to ' study, nor themes to compose. After ' having walked about two hours, my ' little legs began to refuse their ser- ' vice: I had never before made such ' a long journey; and I found myself ' obliged to halt, and give them some ' rest. I sat down under a tree, by ' the side of the road; and there, for ' my amusement, took my rudiments ' out of my pocket, and read it in ' sport; then remembering the stripes ' and floggings which it had made me ' receive, I tore out the leaves, saying ' in great wrath, " Ah, dog of a book!

* Orphans, or rather boys.

" thou ſhalt never make me ſhed tears
" again." While I thus glutted my
' revenge, ſtrewing the ground about
' me with declenſions and conjuga-
' tions, a hermit paſſed by, with a
' white beard, large ſpectacles, and a
' venerable air. He came up to me,
' and we examined each other with
' great eagerneſs. " My little gentle-
" man," ſaid he ſmiling, " we ſeem
" to look at one another with great
" attention: I believe it would not be
" a bad ſcheme for us to live together
" in my hermitage, which is not two
" hundred yards from hence."—" I am
" your humble ſervant!" anſwered I
' haſtily; " I have no ambition to be
" an hermit." The good old man
' laughed at this reply; and embracing
' me, ſaid, " Don't be frightened at
" my dreſs, my ſon; though it is not
" agreeable, it is uſeful; it makes me
" lord of a charming retreat, and of
" the neighbouring villages; the in-
" habitants of which love, or rather
" idolize me. Come along with me,"
' added he, " and I will give you a jacket
" like this that I wear. If you chuſe
" it, you ſhall ſhare with me the ſweets
" of my retired life; and if you don't
" like it upon trial, you ſhall not
" only be at liberty to leave me, but
" you may be alſo aſſured, that I will
" not fail of giving you a gratification
" at parting." I ſuffered myſelf to be
' perſuaded, and followed the old her-
' mit, who aſked me ſeveral queſtions;
' to which I anſwered with an ingenuity
' which I have not always preſerved
' in the ſequel. When we came to
' the hermitage, he preſented to me
' ſome fruit, which I devoured, having
' eaten nothing the whole day but a
' morſel of dry bread, on which I had
' breakfaſted in the morning at the
' hoſpital. The anchorite, ſeeing me
' make ſuch good uſe of my jaws,
' ſaid, " Courage, my child; don't
" ſpare the fruit; I have ample pro-
" viſion of it, thank God, and I did not
" bring thee hither to let thee ſtarve."
' This was indeed very true; for in
' leſs than an hour after our arrival, he
' lighted a fire, ſpitted a leg of mutton;
' and, while I turned the ſpit, covered
' a ſmall table with a very dirty nap-
' kin; upon which he laid two plates,
' one for himſelf, and the other for
' me.

' When the mutton was ready, he
' took it off the ſpit, and cut ſome
' ſlices for our ſupper, which was not
' a dry meal; for we drank excellent
' wine, of which alſo he had got ſtore.
" Well, my chicken," ſaid he, when
' we had done eating, " art thou ſa-
" tisfied with my ordinary! This is
" the manner in which thou ſhalt be
" treated every day, if thou liveſt with
" me. Beſides, thou ſhalt do what
" thou pleaſeſt in this hermitage. All
" that I exact of thee is, to accompa-
" ny me when I go a-begging through
" the neighbouring villages, and lead
" an aſs with two panniers, which the
" charitable peaſants uſually fill with
" eggs, bread, fleſh, and fiſh. This
" is all I require of thee." —" I will
" do every thing you deſire," I repli-
' ed, " provided you don't oblige me
" to learn Latin." Brother Chryſoſ-
' tom, (that was the old hermit's
' name) could not help laughing at
' my ſimplicity; and aſſured me anew,
' that he did not intend to force my
' inclination.

' We went a begging the very next
' day with the aſs, which I led by the
' halter, and reaped a plentiful har-
' veſt; every peaſant being glad of an
' opportunity to put ſomething in our
' panniers: one threw in a whole loaf;
' another, a large piece of bacon; a
' third, a partridge; in ſhort, we
' brought home victuals enough for
' eight days; a circumſtance that de-
' notes the great friendſhip and eſteem
' that the country people had for the
' hermit. It is true, he was of great
' uſe to them, in giving them his ad-
' vice when they came to conſult him,
' in re-eſtabliſhing peace in families
' where diſcord reigned, in marrying
' their daughters, in furniſhing them
' with remedies for a thouſand ſorts
' of diſeaſes, and in teaching prayers
' proper for barren women who wiſh-
' ed to have children.

' By what I have ſaid, you ſee that
' I was well fed in my hermitage; I
' was as well accommodated in point
' of ſleeping: ſtretched upon good freſh
' ſtraw, with a cuſhion of coarſe cloth
' under my head, and a covering of
' the ſame ſtuff over my body, I made
' but one nap, which laſted all night
' long. Brother Chryſoſtom, who had
' promiſed to give me a hermit's garb,
' made one for me from an old robe
' that he uſed to wear, and called me

' little

'little Brother Scipio. As ſoon as I 'appeared in the villages, in that re-'gular habit, I was thought ſo hand-'ſome, that the aſs was better loaded 'than formerly: the buſineſs was, 'who ſhould give moſt to the little 'brother, with whoſe figure they were 'ſo well pleaſed.

'The eaſy idle life which I led with 'the old hermit, could not be diſa-'greeable to a boy of my age: accord-'ingly, I liked it ſo well, that I 'ſhould have continued there ſtill, if 'the Fates had not ſpun for me days 'of a very different kind; but the 'deſtiny which I was bound to fulfil, 'ſoon detached me from idleneſs, and 'made me quit Brother Chryſoſtom, 'as you ſhall hear. I frequently per-'ceived the old man at work upon 'the cuſhion that ſerved him for a 'pillow; he did nothing but ſew and 'unſew it; and I obſerved, one day, 'that he put money into it. This re-'mark was attended by a curioſity 'which I propoſed to gratify the very 'firſt journey he ſhould take to To-'ledo, whither he was wont to go 'once a week. I waited impatiently 'for the day, without having as yet 'any other deſign than of ſatisfying 'my curioſity. At length the old man 'ſet out, and I ripped up his pillow, 'where I found among the wool with 'which it was filled, the value of a-'bout fifty crowns in different ſorts 'of coin.

'This treaſure, in all probability, 'was the gratitude of the country peo-'ple, whom the hermit had cured by 'his remedies, and of the women who 'had been bleſſed with children, by 'virtue of his prayers. Be this as it 'will, I no ſooner ſaw that it was 'money which I could appropriate 'to myſelf with impunity, than my 'Ægyptian diſpoſition prevailed. I 'was ſeized with a deſire of ſtealing 'it, which can be attributed to no-'thing but the force of that blood 'which circulated in my veins. I 'yielded to the temptation without re-'ſiſtance, ſecured the money in a kind 'of bag where we kept our combs and 'night-caps; then quitting my her-'mit's habit, and reſuming that of 'an orphan, I ran away from the her-'mitage, believing that I carried off 'in my bag the whole riches of the 'Indies.

'You have heard my beginning,' continued Scipio; 'and I don't doubt 'that you expect a train of facts of 'the ſame nature: your expectation 'will not be deceived; I have many 'other ſuch exploits to recount before 'I come to my laudable actions; but 'I will come to them at laſt; and you 'will ſee, by my narration, that a 'rogue may very well turn an honeſt 'man.

'Child as I was, I was not fool 'enough to return to Toledo; that 'would have been expoſing me to the 'chance of meeting Brother Chryſoſ-'tom, who would have made me re-'ſtore my treaſure in a very diſagree-'able manner: I followed another 'road, which conducted me to the 'village of Galves, where I ſtopped 'at an inn, the landlady of which was 'a widow of forty, who had all the 'qualities requiſite for turning the 'penny. This woman no ſooner caſt 'her eyes upon me, than judging, by 'my dreſs, that I was a fugitive from 'the Orphan Hoſpital, ſhe aſked who 'I was, and whither I went. I an-'ſwered, that having loſt both father 'and mother, I wanted to go to ſer-'vice. "Child," ſaid ſhe, "canſt "thou read?" I aſſured her, that I 'both read and wrote to admiration. 'Indeed, I could form my letters, 'and join them in ſuch a manner as 'ſomewhat reſembled writing; and 'that is enough for the occaſions of a 'village-tavern. "I take thee into my "ſervice," ſaid the landlady; "thou "ſhalt not be altogether uſeleſs, but "ſhalt keep an account of all my "debts active and paſſive. I will give "thee no wages," added ſhe; "be-"cauſe the good company that come "here, never forget the ſervants; ſo "that thou mayeſt depend upon re-"ceiving good perquiſites."

'I accepted the propoſal, reſerving 'to myſelf, as you may well believe, 'the right of changing the air, as ſoon 'as my ſtay at Galves ſhould become 'diſagreeable. When I found my-'ſelf engaged in the ſervice of this 'inn, I became very uneaſy in my 'mind: I did not deſire to be thought 'a monied-man; and was very anxi-'ous to know where I ſhould conceal 'my hoard, ſo that it ſhould be ſe-'cure from every ſtranger's hand. I 'did not as yet know the houſe well

'enough to truſt to thoſe places which 'ſeemed moſt proper to ſecure it. 'With what perplexity are riches at-'tended! I determined, however, to 'put my bag in a corner of our corn-'loft where there was ſtraw; and be-'lieving it more ſafe there than in any 'other place, made myſelf as eaſy as 'poſſible. There were three ſervants 'in this houſe; a fat hoſtler, a young 'maid of Galicia, and myſelf: each 'of us drew as much as we could 'from the travellers that halted, whe-'ther they came on horſe-back or a-'foot. I commonly caught ſome half-'pence of theſe gentlemen, when I 'brought in the bill: they gave ſome-'thing alſo to the hoſtler, for taking 'care of their beaſts; but as for the 'Galician, who was the idol of all 'the carriers that paſſed, ſhe got as 'many crowns as we did farthings. 'Every penny that I received, I car-'ried to increaſe my treaſure in the 'corn-loft; and the more I ſaw my 'wealth increaſe, the more did I feel 'my little heart attached to it: I 'ſometimes kiſſed the ſpecie, and con-'templated the different pieces with a 'degree of rapture which none but 'miſers can conceive.

'This affection for my treaſure ob-'liged me to go and viſit it thirty 'times a day: I frequently met the 'landlady upon the ſtair; and ſhe be-'ing naturally diſtruſtful, was cu-'rious, one day, to know what it 'was that could bring me every mo-'ment to the corn-loft. Thither there-'fore ſhe went, and ſearched every 'corner, imagining that I, perhaps, 'concealed in that place ſome things 'which I had ſtole in the houſe. She 'did not forget to remove the ſtraw 'that covered my bag, which having 'found, ſhe opened it; and ſeeing 'crowns and piſtoles appear, believed, 'or pretended to believe, that I had 'ſtole them from her. She ſeized the 'ſum total accordingly: then, call-'ing me little wretch, and little 'raſcal, ordered the hoſtler, who was 'entirely devoted to her will, to give 'me fifty good laſhes, which, when 'I had received, ſhe turned me out 'of doors, ſaying, that ſhe would 'ſuffer no knave to live in her houſe. 'In vain did I proteſt that I had not 'robbed the landlady: ſhe maintain-'ed the contrary; and of courſe her 'word was believed rather than mine. 'Thus Brother Chryſoſtom's money 'paſſed from one thief to another.

'I lamented the loſs of my money 'as a man mourns the death of an 'only child; and though my tears did 'not retrieve what I had loſt, at leaſt 'they excited the compaſſion of ſome 'people who ſaw them ſhed; and, 'among others, of the Curate of Gal-'ves, who was paſſing by chance. He 'ſeemed moved at my melancholy 'condition, and carried me along with 'him to the parſonage; where, in 'order to gain my confidence, or ra-'ther to pump me, he began by pity-'ing my ſituation. "How much," 'ſaid he, "does this poor child deſerve "compaſſion! It is not ſurpriſing if, "abandoned to himſelf in ſuch a ten-"der age, he has committed a bad "action. Moſt men find it difficult "to live honeſt through the whole "courſe of their lives." Then addreſs-'ing himſelf to me, "My ſon," add-'ed he, "from what part of Spain do "you come, and who are your pa-"rents? You ſeem to be of ſome "good family. Tell me ingenuouſly, "and be aſſured that I will not aban-"don you."

'The curate, by this politick and 'charitable diſcourſe, engaged me in-'ſenſibly to diſcover all my affairs with 'great ſincerity. I made a general 'confeſſion. After which he ſaid, "Friend, though it does not become "hermits to hoard up money, that "does not leſſen your crime; in rob-"bing Brother Chryſoſtom, you have "tranſgreſſed that article of the de-"calogue which forbids theft: but "I'll oblige the landlady to reſtore the "money, which I will ſend to the "hermit; ſo that your conſcience "may be eaſy on that ſcore." But 'this, I ſwear, was the leaſt of my 'uneaſineſs. The curate, who had a 'deſign of his own, did not ſtop there: "My child," ſaid he, "I intereſt "myſelf in your behalf, and will pro-"cure a good place for you. I will "to-morrow ſend you by a carrier to "my nephew, who is a canon of the "cathedral of Toledo; he will not re-"fuſe, at my requeſt, to receive you "into the number of his lacquies, who "live plentifully, like ſo many incum-

"bents,

" benta, on the revenue of his pre-
" bend: you will be perfectly well
" ſituated, I can aſſure you."

' I was ſo much conſoled by this
' aſſurance, that I no longer thought
' of the bag nor the ſtripes which I
' had received, my mind being wholly
' poſſeſſed with the pleaſure of living
' like an incumbent. Next day, while
' I was at breakfaſt, a carrier came to
' the parſonage, according to the cu-
' rate's orders, with two mules bridled
' and ſaddled. I was helped up on
' the one, the carrier mounted on the
' other, and we ſet out for Toledo.
' My fellow-traveller was a fellow of
' humour, who liked nothing better
' than to make himſelf merry at ano-
' ther's expence. "My little junior,"
' ſaid he, "you have a good friend
" in the Curate of Galves; he could
" not give you a better proof of his
" affection than that of recommending
" you to the ſervice of his nephew the
" canon, whom I have the honour to
" know, and who is, without contra-
" diction, the pearl of the whole chap-
" ter. He is none of thoſe devotees
" whoſe pale and meagre faces preach
" up mortification. He has a capa-
" cious countenance, a roſy complex-
" ion, a merry look, is a jovial ſoul
" who enjoys the preſent hour, and
" in particular loves good chear.
" You will live in his houſe like a
" prince."

' The rogue of a carrier, perceiving
' that I liſtened with great ſatisfaction,
' continued to extol the happineſs I
' ſhould enjoy in the canon's ſervice;
' and did not leave off ſpeaking until
' we arrived at the village of Obiſa,
' where we ſtopped a little to bait our
' mules. The carrier, while he walk-
' ed about in the inn, let fall by ac-
' cident, out of his pocket, a paper
' which I was cunning enough to pick
' up without being obſerved, and
' which I found means to read while
' he was in the ſtable. It was a letter
' directed to the prieſts of the Orphan
' Hoſpital, and conceived in theſe
' terms.

" GENTLEMEN,

" I Thought I was bound in charity
" to ſend back to you a little
" knave, who is a runaway from your
" hoſptial. He does not ſeem to want
" capacity, but deſerves to be careful-
" ly mewed up; and I hope that, by
" proper correction, he will in time
" do well. That God may preſerve
" your pious and charitable worſhips,
" is the prayer of

" The CURATE of GALVES."

' When I had read this letter, which
' informed me of the curate's good in-
' tention, I did not long heſitate. To
' leave the inn, and gain the banks of
' the Tagus, which was more than a
' league from thence, was the work of
' a moment. Fear lent me wings to
' fly from the prieſts of the Orphan
' Hoſpital, to whom I would by no
' means return, ſo much was I diſguſt-
' ed with their manner of teaching the
' Latin tongue. I entered Toledo as
' gayly as if I had known where to
' board. True, it is a city of bene-
' diction, in which a man of genius,
' reduced to the neceſſity of living at
' his neighbour's expence, cannot die
' of hunger. Scarce had I arrived in
' the market-place, when a well-dreſſ-
' ed cavalier, whom I paſſed, laid hold
' of my arm, and ſaid, "Hark'e, my
" boy, will you ſerve me? I ſhould
" be glad to have ſuch a lacquey as
" you."—"And I ſhould be glad,"
' anſwered I, "to have ſuch a maſter
" as you."—"If that be the caſe,"
' he reſumed, "thou art mine from
" this moment. Follow me." This
' I did, without making any farther
' reply.

' This cavalier, who might be a-
' bout thirty years of age, and was
' called Don Abel, lodged in a houſe
' where he poſſeſſed a very handſome
' apartment. He was by profeſſion a
' gameſter, and we lived together in
' this manner: in the morning, I cut
' as much tobacco for him as would
' fill five or ſix pipes, bruſhed his
' cloaths, and went for the barber to
' ſhave him and dreſs his whiſkers.
' After which he went out, and made
' a tour among the tennis-courts,
' from whence he returned about
' eleven or twelve o'clock at night.
' But each morning before he went
' out, he gave me three royals for my
' day's expence, leaving me at liberty
' to do what I pleaſed until ten o'clock
' at night. He was very well ſatisfied
' with me, provided he found me at
' home

'home when he returned. He ordered a doublet and hoſe of livery to be made for me, ſo that I looked like the page of a lady of the town. I was very well ſatisfied with my place, and certainly I could not have found one more agreeable to my humour.

'I had led this happy life almoſt a whole month, when my maſter aſked if I was pleaſed with his behaviour. I anſwered, that I could not be more ſo. "Well then," he reſumed, "we ſhall ſet out to-morrow for Seville, whither my affairs call me. Thou wilt not be ſorry to ſee that capital of Andaluſia:

"He that hath not Seville ſeen,
(ſaith the proverb)
"Is no traveller, I ween."

'I aſſured him, that I was ready to follow him whitherſoever he ſhould go. That very day, the Seville carrier came to his lodging, to fetch a large coffer that contained all his moveables; and in the morning we ſet out for Andaluſia.

'Signior Don Abel was ſo lucky at play, that he never loſt, except when he choſe to loſe. This talent often obliged him to change his place of habitation, that he might avoid the reſentment of dupes; and this was the cauſe of our preſent journey. Being arrived at Seville, we took lodgings near the gate of Cordova, and began to live as we had lived at Toledo: but my maſter found a difference between theſe two cities. In the tennis-courts of Seville he met with gameſters who played as ſucceſsfully as he; ſo that he came home ſometimes very much out of humour. One morning, being chagrined at the loſs of one hundred piſtoles, which he ventured the preceding day, he aſked why I had not carried his dirty linen to a woman whom he employed to waſh and perfume it. I anſwered, that I had forgot. Upon which, falling into a paſſion, he gave me half a dozen boxes on the face, ſo rudely, that he made me ſee more candles than ever burnt in Solomon's temple. "There, little wretch," ſaid he; "there is ſomething to make you mind your buſineſs. Muſt I be always at your "tail, to tell you what you have to "do? why are you not as ready to "work as to eat? are you ſuch a beaſt "as to be incapable of anticipating "my orders and occaſions!" So ſaying, he went out of his apartment, leaving me very much mortified at the blows I had received for ſuch a ſlight fault. I don't know what adventure happened to him ſoon after in the tennis-court, but one evening he came home very much heated, and ſaid, "Scipio, I am reſolved to "go to Italy, and muſt embark the "day after to-morrow, in a ſhip "bound for Genoa. I have my own "reaſons for making that voyage: wilt "thou not accompany me, and lay "hold of ſuch a fair occaſion to ſee "the moſt delightful country in the "world?" I ſaid I would; but at the ſame time purpoſed to diſappear juſt when he intended to embark. I thought I would revenge myſelf of him in this manner; and was very well pleaſed with the ſcheme, which I could not help imparting to a profeſſed bravo whom I met in the ſtreet: for, ſince my arrival at Seville, I had contracted ſome bad acquaintances, and this in particular. I told him in what manner and for what I had been buffeted, then communicated my deſign of leaving Don Abel when he ſhould be juſt ready to go on board, and aſked his opinion of my reſolution.

'The bravo frowned while he liſtened to me, and twirled the curls of his muſtachio; then, blaming my maſter with an air of gravity, "Little gentleman," ſaid he, "you are "diſhonoured for ever, if you reſtrict "yourſelf to that frivolous revenge "which you have hatched. It is not "enough to let Don Abel depart by "himſelf; that would not be puniſhment ſufficient. The chaſtiſement "muſt be proportioned to the injury. "Let us therefore carry off his goods "and money, which we will ſhare like "brothers after he is gone." Although I was naturally inclined to thieving, I was frightened at the propoſal of ſuch an important robbery. Nevertheleſs, the arch rogue who made it, did not fail to perſuade me to it; and you ſhall hear the ſucceſs of our enterprize. The bravo, who was a big ſtrong fellow, came to our

'lodg-

'lodging next day in the twilight, 'when I ſhewed him the coffer in 'which my maſter had already ſecured 'his effects, and aſked if he could 'carry ſuch a weight. "Such a "weight!" ſaid he; "know, that when "the buſineſs is to carry off the goods "of another, I can lift Noah's ark." 'So ſaying, he ſlung the coffer on his 'ſhoulders with eaſe, and went down 'ſtairs with it upon tip-toes. I fol-'lowed him with ſome caution, and 'we were juſt going out at the ſtreet-'door when Don Abel, brought thi-'ther ſo ſeaſonably by his good genius, 'appeared all of a ſudden.

"Where art thou going with the "coffer?" ſaid he. I was ſo con-'founded, that I ſtood ſilent; and the 'bravo, ſeeing the affair miſgive, 'threw down his load, and betook 'himſelf to flight, in order to avoid 'explanations. "Where art thou "going with the coffer!" ſaid my 'maſter a ſecond time. "Sir," an-'ſwered I, more dead than alive, "I "am going to carry it on board the "ſhip in which you are to embark to-"morrow for Italy."—"Ha!" he 'replied, "doſt thou know in what "ſhip I intend to ſail?"—"No, Sir," 'ſaid I; "but I have a tongue in my "head; and I ſhould have enquired "at the harbour, where ſomebody "would have certainly told me." At 'this my anſwer, which he ſuſpected, 'he darted ſuch a furious look at me, 'that I was afraid of a ſecond beating. "Who ordered you," cried he, "to "bring my coffer out of the houſe?" —"You yourſelf," ſaid I. "Don't "you remember how you upbraided "me ſome days ago? Did not you ſay, "while you beat me, that you ex-"pected I would prevent your orders, "and do what was proper for your "ſervice of my own accord? Now it "was in conſequence of this direction "that I employed one to carry your "coffer to the ſhip." The gameſter 'obſerving that I was more miſchie-'vous than he imagined, diſmiſſed 'me immediately; ſaying, with an 'air of indifference, "Go, Mr. Sci-"pio; and Heaven be your guide. I "don't chuſe to play with people that "have ſometimes a card too many, "ſometimes one too few. Get out of "my ſight," added he, in another tone, "leſt I make you ſing without your "gamut." I ſaved him the trouble 'of repeating his command, and got 'off in a twinkling; being woundily 'afraid that he would ſtrip me of my 'cloaths, which however he luckily 'ſpared. I walked along the ſtreet, 'conſidering where I could lie, with 'my two royals, which conſtituted my 'whole ſtock. I arrived at the gate 'of the archbiſhop's palace; and, as 'his grace's ſupper was then dreſſing, 'an agreeable ſavour iſſued from the 'kitchen, and diffuſed itſelf a whole 'league around. "Zooks!" ſaid I to 'myſelf, "I ſhould like to diſpatch "one of thoſe ragouts which ſalute my "noſe. I ſhould even be contented "with an opportunity of dipping my "four fingers and thumb in it. What, "can't I fall upon ſome method of "taſting thoſe dainties that ſmell ſo "agreeably! the thing does not ſeem "impoſſible." I whetted my imagina-'tion accordingly; and, by dint of 'muſing, hatched a trick, which I 'immediately put in practice, and 'which ſucceeded to my wiſh. I 'entered the court of the palace, and 'running towards the kitchen, cried 'as loud as I could, "Help! help!" 'as if I had been purſued by ſome 'aſſaſſin.

'At my repeated cries, Mr. Diego, 'the archbiſhop's cook, with two or 'three ſcullions, came running out to 'know the cauſe; and, ſeeing nobody 'but me, aſked why I made ſuch a 'noiſe. "Ah, Sir!" ſaid I, pretend-'ing to be frightened almoſt out of my 'wits, "for the love of St. Polycarp! "pray, ſave me from the fury of a bravo "that wants to kill me!"—"Where "is this bravo?" cried Diego; "you "are quite alone, without ſo much as "a cat at your heels. Go, my child, "lay aſide your fear. It was proba-"bly ſomebody that wanted to terrify "you for his diverſion, and who did "well not to follow you into this pa-"lace; for, if he had, we ſhould have "cut off his ears."—"No, no," ſaid 'I to the cook; "he did not purſue "me for his diverſion. He is a big ill-"looking fellow, who intends to ſtrip "me, and waits hard by in the ſtreet "to catch me as I go out."—"He "ſhall wait a long time then," he re-'plied: "for you ſhall ſtay here till "to-morrow, and want for neither "ſupper nor bed."

'I was

'I was tranſported with joy when 'I heard theſe words; and it was a 'raviſhing ſight to me, when, being 'conducted into the kitchen by Mr. 'Diego, I beheld the preparation for 'his grace's ſupper. I reckoned fifteen 'perſons at work, but I could not 'number the diſhes that I ſaw, ſo 'careful Providence had been in be-'half of the archbiſhop. It was then 'that, feaſting upon the ſteams of the 'ragouts which I had only ſmelled 'afar off before, I became acquainted 'with ſenſuality. I had the honour 'to ſup and ſleep with the ſcullions, 'whoſe friendſhip I gained to that de-'gree, that, next day, when I went to 'thank Mr. Diego for the aſylum he 'had ſo generouſly afforded, he ſaid, "Our kitchen lads tell me, they would "be glad to have you for a comrade, "they like your humour ſo well; "would you chuſe to be their compa-"nion?" I anſwered, that if I enjoyed 'that piece of good fortune, I ſhould 'think myſelf perfectly happy. "If "that be the caſe, my friend," ſaid he, "look upon yourſelf from this mo-"ment as an officer of the palace." So 'ſaying, he went and preſented me to 'the major-domo, who, on account of 'my ſprightly look, judged me worthy 'to be received among the turnſpits.

'I was no ſooner in poſſeſſion of this 'honourable employment, than Mr. 'Diego, according to the cuſtom of 'cooks in great families, who private-'ly ſend victuals to their miſtreſſes, 'choſe me to carry to a certain lady in 'the neighbourhood ſometimes loins 'of veal, and ſometimes fowl or veni-'ſon. This good lady was a widow 'ſcarce turned of thirty, very hand-'ſome, very ſmart, and, to all ap-'pearance, not over faithful to her 'cook, who not only furniſhed her 'with victuals, bread, ſugar, and oil, 'but alſo provided her in good wine, 'all at the expence of the archbiſhop.

'I was effectually improved in the 'palace of his grace, where I played a 'very pleaſant prank, which is ſtill 'ſpoken of at Seville. The pages and 'ſome other domeſticks, in order to 'celebrate their maſter's birth-day, 'took it in their heads to repreſent 'a comedy. They choſe that of the '*Benavides**; and as they had occa-'ſion for a boy of my age, to play the 'part of the young King of Leon, they 'caſt their eyes upon me. The major-'domo, who piqued himſelf upon his 'talent of declamation, undertook to 'inſtruct me; and, after he had given 'me a few leſſons, aſſured them, that I 'would not be the worſt actor in the 'play. As our maſter was at the ex-'pence of the entertainment, no coſt 'was ſpared to render it magnificent. 'A theatre was built in the largeſt hall 'in the palace, and decorated with great 'taſte. There was a bed of turf made in 'the back ſcene, on which I was to ap-'pear aſleep, and the Moors fall upon 'me to make me priſoner. When the 'actors were perfect in their parts, the 'archbiſhop fixed the day for the re-'preſentation, and did not fail to in-'vite the moſt conſiderable noblemen 'and ladies of the city to come and ſee 'it. The day being come, each actor 'was buſied with his dreſs. As for 'mine, it was brought to me by a taylor, 'accompanied by our major-domo; 'who, having been at the trouble of 'teaching me my part, was alſo pleaſed 'to ſuperintend my dreſs. The taylor 'cloathed me with a rich velvet robe, 'trimmed with gold lace and buttons, 'and hanging ſleeves adorned with 'fringe of the ſame metal; and the 'major-domo himſelf placed upon my 'head a crown of paper, powdered 'with a quantity of fine pearls, inter-'mixed with falſe ſtones. Beſides, 'they girded me with a ſaſh of pink-'coloured ſilk, wrought with ſilk 'flowers; and every thing they ſaid to 'me ſeemed to lend me wings to run a-'way with the plunder. At length, the 'play began about twilight. I open-'ed the ſcene, by pronouncing ſome 'verſes, importing, that, being unable 'to keep myſelf awake, I was going 'to abandon myſelf to ſlumber; at 'the ſame time I withdrew, and lay 'down on the bed of turf which had 'been prepared for me; but, inſtead 'of falling aſleep, I began to conſider 'how I could get into the ſtreet, and 'eſcape with my royal robes. A little 'private ſtair, that led down under the 'theatre into the hall, ſeemed proper 'for the execution of my deſign. I 'accordingly got up nimbly, and 'ſeeing that nobody took notice of

* A noble family in Spain, deſcended from Alonſo, the ninth King of Caſtile.

'me,

'me, ſlipped down that ſtair, which 'conducted me into the hall, the door 'of which I gained, crying, "Room, "room! I am going to change my "dreſs." Every one made way for 'me; ſo that, in leſs than two minutes, 'I got out of the palace with impunity, and, by favour of the night, repaired to the houſe of a bravo of my 'acquaintance.

'He was perfectly aſtoniſhed to ſee 'me in that garb; and, when I imparted the affair, he laughed until he 'was ready to burſt; then embracing 'me with ſo much the more joy as he 'flattered himſelf with the hopes of 'ſharing the ſpoils of the King of 'Leon, he congratulated me on having 'performed ſuch a fine ſtroke; and 'told me, that, if I went on at that 'rate, my genius would one day make 'a great noiſe in the world. After we 'had ſufficiently made ourſelves merry, "What ſhall we do with this rich "dreſs?" ſaid I to the bravo; who an'ſwered, "Give yourſelf no trouble on "that ſcore. I know an honeſt broker, "who, without expreſſing the leaſt "curioſity, buys every thing that is "brought to him, provided he likes the "bargain; to-morrow morning I will "go and bring him hither." In effect, 'the bravo went out next day early, 'leaving me a-bed in his room, and 'in two hours returned with the bro'ker, who carried a yellow bag under 'his arm. "Friend," ſaid he to me, "this is Signior Ybagnez de Segovia, "who, in ſpite of the bad example 'ſhewn by his brethren of the trade, "deals with the moſt ſcrupulous inte"grity. He will tell you to a far"thing the value of this dreſs that you "want to part with, and you may de"pend upon his eſtimation."—"Yes, "certainly," ſaid the broker. "I "muſt be a wretch indeed, if I prized "a thing under the true value. That "is a crime with which I was never "taxed, thank God; and no man ſhall "ever lay it to the charge of Ybagnez "de Segovia. Let us ſee the goods "you want to ſell, and I will con"ſcientiouſly tell you what they are "worth."—"Here they are," ſaid 'the bravo, ſhewing them; "and "you muſt allow that nothing can be "more magnificent: obſerve the beau"ty of that Genoa velvet, and the "richneſs of the trimming."—"I "am quite charmed with it," replied 'the broker, after he had viewed it 'attentively; "nothing can be finer." —"And what do you think of the "pearls of this crown?" reſumed my 'friend. "If they were more round," 'ſaid Ybagnez, "they would be in"eſtimable: however, ſuch as they "are, I think them very pretty, and "like them as well as the reſt of the "dreſs. I ſincerely own it," conti'nued he, "another rogue of a broker "in my place would pretend to deſpiſe "the merchandize, that he might have "it cheap, and would not be aſhamed "of offering twenty piſtoles for it; but "I, who have ſome conſcience, will "give forty."

'If Ybagnez had ſaid a hundred, 'he would not then have been a juſt 'appraiſer; ſince the pearls alone were 'well worth two hundred crowns. 'The bravo, who had a fellow-feeling 'with him, ſaid to me, "You ſee "how fortunate you are in falling "into the hands of an honeſt man. "Signior Ybagnez prizes every thing "as if he was upon his death-bed." —"That's true," ſaid the broker; "and therefore I never riſe or fall a "farthing in my price. Well," add'ed he, "is it a bargain? Shall I "count out the money to you?"— "Stay," replied the bravo; "my friend "muſt try on this ſuit of cloaths, "which I deſired you to bring him. "I am miſtaken if they won't fit him "exactly." Then the broker, unty'ing his bundle, ſhewed me a doublet 'and hoſe, of a very good dark-colour'ed cloth, with ſilver buttons; the 'whole ſeemingly half worn. I got 'up to try this dreſs; which, though 'both too long and too wide, appear'ed to thoſe gentlemen to have been 'made on purpoſe for me. Ybagnez 'rated it at ten piſtoles; and, as he 'never abated one farthing of what 'he aſked, we were obliged to comply 'with his valuation. So he took 'thirty piſtoles out of his purſe, and 'ſpread them upon the table; after 'which he made another bundle of 'my crown and royal robes, which he 'carried off accordingly.

'When he was gone, the bravo 'ſaid, "I am very well ſatisfied with "this broker." And good reaſon he 'had to be ſo; for, I am ſure, he gave 'him one hundred piſtoles, at leaſt,

'by way of gratification. But he was 'not contented with that ſum: he took, 'without ceremony, the half of the 'money that lay on the table, leaving 'the other half to me, and ſaying, "My dear Scipio, with theſe fifteen "piſtoles that remain, I adviſe you to "quit this city forthwith; for you "may be aſſured that the archbiſhop "will give orders to ſearch for you "every where. I ſhould be extremely "mortified if, after having ſignalized "yourſelf by an action which will do "honour to your hiſtory, you ſhould "fooliſhly ſuffer yourſelf to be ap-"prehended." I anſwered, that I 'was fully reſolved to leave Seville; 'and, in effect, after having bought a 'hat and ſome ſhirts, I gained the vaſt 'and delightful plain that ſtretches, 'among vines and olives, to the an-'cient city of Carmona, and three 'days after arrived at Cordova *.

'I lodged at an inn as you enter 'the great ſquare where the merchants 'live; and gave myſelf out for the ſon 'of a good family at Toledo, who 'travelled for my pleaſure. I was 'well enough cloathed to make people 'believe this ſtory; and the landlord 'was finally convinced by the ſight of 'ſome piſtoles, which I let him ſee as 'if by chance. It is probable, indeed, 'that my tender years made him be-'lieve I was ſome little libertine who 'had run away from his parents, after 'having robbed them. Be this as it 'will, he did not ſeem curious to know 'more than what I told him of the 'matter; being, in all likelihood, 'afraid that his curioſity might make 'me change my lodging. For ſix 'royals a-day I lived very well in this 'inn, which was frequented by a good 'deal of company, there being at ſup-'per in the evening no leſs than twelve 'people at one table. It was very 'diverting to ſee every one eating 'without ſpeaking a ſyllable, except 'one man, who, talking inceſſantly, 'at random, compenſated for the ſi-'lence of the reſt by his impertinent 'prating. He affected the wit, told 'ſtories, and endeavoured, by quaint 'ſayings, to entertain the company; 'who, from time to time, laughed 'heartily, though not ſo much at the 'brightneſs of his ſallies as at his ri-'diculous behaviour.

'As for my part, I paid ſo little at-'tention to the diſcourſe of this origi-'nal, that I ſhould have riſen from 'ſupper without being able to give 'any account of what he ſaid, had 'he not found means to intereſt me 'in his converſation. "Gentlemen," 'ſaid he, towards the end of our meal, "I have kept for the deſert a moſt "diverting ſtory: an adventure that "befel, a few days ago, at the palace "of the Archbiſhop of Seville. I "had it from a batchelor of my ac-"quaintance, who told me, that he "was preſent when it happened." 'Theſe words diſcompoſed me a good 'deal; I did not doubt that it was 'my adventure which he intended to 'recount; and I was not miſtaken. 'This perſon gave a faithful detail of 'it, and even informed me of what I 'did not know, that is, what hap-'pened in the hall after my depar-'ture: and this you ſhall hear.

'Scarce had I betook myſelf to 'flight, when the Moors, who, ac-'cording to the performance which 'was repreſented, were to carry me 'off, appeared upon the ſtage, with a 'deſign of ſurprizing me on the bed of 'turf, where they thought I was aſleep; 'but when they went to ſeize the King 'of Leon, they were very much aſto-'niſhed to find neither king nor knave. 'The play was immediately inter-'rupted: all the actors were perplex-'ed; ſome called me, others ſearched 'for me; one hallooed, and another 'curſed me. The archbiſhop, per-'ceiving the trouble and confuſion 'that reigned behind the ſcenes, aſk-'ed what was the matter. A page, 'who acted the Graciоſo of the piece,

* Cordua, anciently Corduba, Colonia Patricia, a royal, large, and fine city of Spain, the capital of a little kingdom of it's own name in Andaluſia. It is ſituated on the Guadalquiver, at the foot of a high mountain, a branch of the Sierra Morena: it is the ſee of a biſhop, under the Archbiſhop of Toledo; the roof of the cathedral is ſupported by three hundred and ſixty-five pillars of different ſpecies of marble, and was a Turkiſh moſque in the time of the Saracens. It contains about fourteen thouſand families, has an univerſity, and a good trade in wine, ſilk, and Cordovan leather. It lies ſeventy-four miles north-eaſt of Seville.

'hearing

'hearing the prelate's voice, came out, 'and said to his grace, "My lord, "you need not fear that the Moors "will take the King of Leon pri- "soner; he has escaped with his royal "robes."—"Heaven be praised!" 'cried the archbishop; "he was very "much in the right to fly from the "enemies of our religion, and escape "the chains which they had prepared "for him. He has, doubtless, return- "ed towards Leon, the capital of his "kingdom; and I wish he may get "home without meeting with any bad "accident. Let no man go in pur- "suit of him, for I should be sorry "if his majesty received any morti- "fication from me." The prelate, 'having spoke in this manner, order- 'ed my part to be read, and the play 'to go on.

CHAP. XI.

THE SEQUEL OF SCIPIO'S HISTORY.

'AS long as my money lasted, the 'landlord treated me with great 'respect; but no sooner did he per- 'ceive that my finances were exhaust- 'ed, than he looked cool upon me, 'picked a quarrel, and one morning 'early desired me to leave his house. 'I quitted it with disdain, and went 'into a church belonging to the Do- 'minicans, where, while I heard mass, 'an old mendicant came, and asked 'alms of me. I took two or three 'maravedis out of my pocket, and 'giving them to him said, "Friend, "pray to God to send me some good "place: if your prayer is heard, you "shall not repent of your devotion, "and may depend upon my grati- "tude."

'At these words the beggar viewed 'me very attentively, and answered 'with a serious air, "What post would "you have?"—"I could wish," said 'I, "to be a lacquey in some good "family." He then asked if my oc- 'casions were pressing. "They can- "not be more so,' I resumed: "for, "if I have not the good fortune of "being settled very soon, there is no "medium; I must either die of hun- "ger, or betake myself to your trade." —"If you are reduced to such ne- "cessity," said he, "you, who are "not at all calculated for our busi- "ness, must be in a very disagree- "able situation: but, were you in the "least accustomed to our way of life, "you would prefer it to servitude, "which is, without contradiction, in- "ferior to beggary. Nevertheless, "since you chuse to be a servant, ra- "ther than to live a free and indepen- "dent life, as I do, you shall have a "master immediately. Notwithstand- "ing my appearance, I can be of use "to you: therefore come hither to- "morrow at the same hour."

'Resolved to be punctual, I re- 'turned next day to the same place; 'where I had not been long, before 'the mendicant, coming up to me, 'bid me take the trouble to follow 'him. I did so. He conducted me to 'a cellar not far from the church; and 'this was the place of his residence. 'We entered his habitation; and, sit- 'ting down upon a bench, which was 'at least an hundred years old, he 'spoke to me in this manner: "A "good action, as the proverb says, "always finds it's recompence; you "gave me charity yesterday, and that "determines me to procure a place "for you; and this, please God, I "will soon perform. I am acquainted "with an old Dominican, called Fa- "ther Alexis, who is an holy eccle- "siastick, and great confessor. I have "the honour to run his errands, and "acquit myself in that employment "with so much fidelity and discre- "tion, that he never refuses to use "his interest for me and my friends. "I have spoke to him of you in such "a manner, that he is disposed to do "you service; and I will present "you to his reverence whenever you "please."—"There is not a moment "to lose," said I to the old beggar; "let us go instantly to the good friar." "The mendicant consented, and car- 'ried me forthwith to Father Alexis, 'whom we found in his room, busy 'in writing spiritual letters. He in- 'terrupted his work to speak to me, 'and told me that, at the request of 'the mendicant, he would interest 'himself in my behalf. "Having "been informed," added he, "that "Signior Balthazar Velasquez wanted "a lacquey, I wrote this morning in "your favour; and he has answered, "that he will receive you implicitly

" on my recommendation. You may, " this very day, go to him from me; " he is my penitent and friend." The ' monk, on this occaſion, exhorted me, ' during three quarters of an hour, to ' do my duty with fidelity and dili- ' gence. He enlarged particularly on ' the obligation I was under to ſerve ' Velaſquez with zeal: after which he ' aſſured me, that he would take care ' to maintain me in my poſt, provided ' my maſter ſhould be pleaſed with my ' behaviour. Having thanked the monk ' for his generoſity, I came out of the ' convent with the beggar; who told ' me, that Signior Balthazar Velaſquez ' was an old rich woollen-draper of ' great meekneſs and ſimplicity. " I " dare ſay," added he, " that you " will be perfectly happy in his fa- " mily." I enquired whereabouts the ' citizen lived, and went immediately ' to his houſe, after having promiſed ' to make an acknowledgment to the ' beggar, as ſoon as I ſhould take ' root in my place. I entered a large ' ſhop, where two well-dreſſed appren- ' tices were walking to and fro, in ' expectation of cuſtomers; and, aſk- ' ing if their maſter was at home, told ' them, I had a meſſage to him from ' Father Alexis. At the mention of ' that venerable name, I was ſhewn ' into the back ſhop, where the mer- ' chant ſat at a bureau, turning over ' the leaves of a large day-book. I ' ſaluted him with great reſpect, ſay- ' ing, while I advanced, " Signior, " I am the young man whom the re- " verend Father Alexis recommended " to you for a lacquey." — " Ha! " welcome, my child," ſaid he; " that " holy man's recommendation is ſuf- " ficient. I receive thee into my ſer- " vice, in preference to three or four " lacquies that were ſent by other " people. It is agreed: thy wages run " up from this day forward."

' I had not been long in the ſervice ' of this citizen, before I perceived ' him to be juſt ſuch a man as the ' beggar had deſcribed. His ſimpli- ' city ſeemed even ſo great, that I ' could not help thinking I ſhould find ' ſome difficulty in abſtaining from play- ' ing him ſome trick or other. He had ' been a widower four years, and had ' two children, a ſon turned of five and ' twenty, and a daughter going in her ' fifteenth year; who being brought ' up by a ſevere duenna, and directed ' by Father Alexis, walked in the path ' of virtue: but Gaſpard Velaſquez, ' her brother, though nothing had ' been ſpared in his education, had all ' the vices of a young ſpendthrift. He ' ſometimes lay two or three nights ' abroad; and if, at his return, his ' father took it into his head to re- ' primand him, Gaſpard impoſed ſi- ' lence upon him in a tone ſtill higher ' than that of the old man.

" Scipio," ſaid the draper to me one ' day, " I have a ſon who is the ſole " plague of my life; he is plunged " in all manner of debauchery: a cir- " cumſtance that ſurprizes me very " much; for his education was by no " means neglected. I gave him good " maſters, and my friend Alexis hath " done his utmoſt endeavour to put " him in the right road; but he could " not ſucceed: Gaſpard is fallen into " a ſtate of libertiniſm. Thou wilt " ſay, perhaps, that I treated him too " gently in the beginning of his youth; " and that he was undone by my in- " dulgence; but that was not the caſe; " he was always chaſtiſed when I " thought he deſerved to be uſed with " rigour: for, good-natured as I am, " I have reſolution enough, when " there is occaſion for it. I have even " ordered him to be confined; and the " conſequence was, he became more " wicked than ever. In a word, he " has one of thoſe bad diſpoſitions " which cannot be improved by good " example, remonſtrances, or chaſtiſe- " ment. Heaven alone can work that " miracle!"

' If I was not much moved at the ' ſorrow of this unhappy father, at ' leaſt I pretended to be ſo. " How " much are you to be pitied, Sir!" ' ſaid I; " a good man, like you, de- " ſerves to have a much better ſon." —" Heaven, my child," anſwered he, " is pleaſed to deprive me of that con- " ſolation. Among other cauſes which " Gaſpard gives me to complain of " him," added he, " I will tell thee " in confidence, there is one that makes " me very uneaſy; that is, the incli- " nation which he has to rob me, and " which he but too often finds means " to ſatisfy, in ſpite of all my vigi- " lance. The lacquey, whom you ſuc- " ceed, was in concert with him, and " for that reaſon turned away. As

" for

" for thee, I hope thou wilt not ſuf-
" fer thyſelf to be corrupted by my
" ſon; but eſpouſe my intereſt, as Fa-
" ther Alexis has doubtleſs exhorted
" thee." — " That I'll anſwer for,"
' ſaid I; " his reverence exhorted me
" a whole hour to have nothing in
" view but your advantage: but I can
" aſſure you, I had no need of being
" exhorted to that; I feel myſelf diſ-
" poſed to ſerve you faithfully, and
" my zeal will prove itſelf on all oc-
" caſions."

' He who hears one ſide only, hears
' nothing. Young Velaſquez, who
' was a deviliſh beau, judging by my
' phyſiognomy, that I would be as
' eaſily ſeduced as my predeceſſor, took
' me aſide into a private place, and
' ſpoke to me in theſe terms. "Hark'e,
" my dear, I am perſuaded that my
" father has charged thee to be a ſpy
" upon my actions: take care of thy-
" ſelf; I give thee notice beforehand,
" that the employment is none of the
" moſt agreeable. If ever I perceive
" that thou makeſt thy remarks upon
" me, I will cudgel thee to death:
" whereas, if thou wilt aſſiſt me in
" cheating my father, thou mayeſt de-
" pend upon my gratitude. Muſt I
" be more plain with thee! thou ſhalt
" have a ſhare of the purchaſe. Make
" thy choice therefore, and declare
" this inſtant either for the father or
" ſon, for I will admit of no neutra-
" lity."

" Sir," anſwered I, " you are very
" ſhort with me; and I plainly per-
" ceive, that I cannot help eſpouſing
" your cauſe, though in my heart I feel
" a reluctance to betray Signior Velaſ-
" quez."—" Thou oughteſt to make
" no ſcruple in ſo doing," replied Gaſ-
' pard; " he is an old miſer, who wants
" to keep me ſtill in leading-ſtrings;
" a wretch who denies me the neceſ-
" ſaries of life, in refuſing to furniſh
" me with money for my pleaſures;
" for pleaſures are the neceſſaries of
" life, at the age of five-and-twenty:
" thou muſt therefore look upon my
" father in that point of view."—
" Enough, Sir," ſaid I; " there is no
" ſuch thing as holding out againſt ſo
" juſt a cauſe of complaint. I offer
" my ſervice to ſecond you in your
" laudable undertakings; but let us
" conceal our mutual intelligence, that
" your faithful aſſociate may not be
" turned out of doors. You will do
" well, methinks, in affecting to hate
" me: ſpeak roughly to me before
" people, and do not ſpare ill language;
" even ſome boxes on the ear, and
" kicks on the breech, will not be a-
" miſs; on the contrary, the more
" marks of averſion you beſtow upon
" me, the more confidence will Bal-
" thazar have in my integrity. As
" for my part, I will pretend to avoid
" your converſation: in ſerving you
" at table, I will ſeem to acquit my-
" ſelf with regret; and when I talk of
" you to the apprentices, don't take
" it ill, that I rail at you with great
" bitterneſs."

" Egad!" cried Velaſquez, hearing
' my laſt words; " I admire thy ge-
" nius, my friend: thou ſheweſt, at
" thy age, an aſtoniſhing capacity for
" intrigue, from whence I conceive
" the moſt happy preſage; for I hope,
" with thy aſſiſtance, I ſhall not leave
" my father one ſingle piſtole."——
" You do me a great deal of honour,"
' ſaid I, " in depending ſo much on
" my induſtry: I will do my utmoſt
" endeavour to juſtify the good opi-
" nion you have of my underſtanding;
" and if I fail, at leaſt, it ſhall not
" be my fault."

' It was not long before I let Gaſ-
' pard ſee that I was actually the man
' he wanted; and this is the firſt ſer-
' vice I did him: Balthazar's ſtrong-
' box ſtood in his chamber, juſt by his
' bedſide, and ſerved him inſtead of a
' pew for prayer. Every time I look-
' ed at it, my eye-ſight was regaled;
' and I frequently ſaid to myſelf:
" Friend ſtrong-box, muſt thou be al-
" ways locked to me? Shall I never
" have the pleaſure of contemplating
" thy contents?" As I went when-
' ever I pleaſed into this chamber,
' which was forbid to nobody but
' Gaſpard, I happened one day to per-
' ceive his father, who, thinking him-
' ſelf unobſerved, after having opened
' and locked his ſtrong-box, concealed
' the key behind a hanging. I mark-
' ed the place well, and imparted the
' diſcovery to my young maſter, who
' embraced me with joy, ſaying, " Ah,
" my dear Scipio! what a charming
" piece of news is this? our fortune
" is made, my child. I will this ve-
" ry day give thee wax, with which
" thou mayeſt take the impreſſion of

" the

" the key, and put it into my hands. " I ſhall eaſily find an obliging lock- " ſmith in Cordova; in which, thank " Heaven, there is no ſcarcity of " rogues."

" But why," ſaid I to Gaſpard, " would you make a falſe key, when " we can uſe the true one?"—" Be- " cauſe," anſwered he, " my father, " through diſtruſt, or ſome other mo- " tive, may take it in his head to hide " it elſewhere; and therefore it is bet- " ter to have one for ourſelves." I ' approved of his caution; and, yield- ' ing to his inclination, prepared for ' taking the impreſſion of the key. ' This was executed one morning ear- ' ly, while my old maſter paid a viſit ' to Father Alexis, with whom he had ' uſually long converſations. This ' was not all; I uſed the key in open- ' ing the box, which being filled with ' large and ſmall bags, threw me into ' a charming perplexity: I did not ' know which to chuſe, ſuch affection ' did I conceive for both kinds. Ne- ' verthelefs, as the fear of being ſur- ' prized did not permit me to make a ' long ſcrutiny, I laid hold of one of ' the largeſt at a venture: then locking ' the coffer, and replacing the key be- ' hind the hangings, I quitted the ' chamber with my prey, which I went ' and concealed under my bed, in a ' ſmall wardrobe where I lay.

' Having performed this operation ' ſo ſucceſsfully, I went immediately ' to the young Velaſquez, who waited ' for me in a houſe where he had ap- ' pointed to meet me, and gave him ' infinite joy, by telling what I had ' done. He was ſo well ſatisfied, that ' he loaded me with careſſes, and ge- ' nerouſly offered me the half of the ' money which was in the bag: but ' that I refuſed, ſaying, " No, no, " Sir; this firſt bag is your own, uſe " it for your occaſions: I will ſoon " return to the ſtrong-box, where, " thank Heaven! there is money e- " nough for us both." In effect, three ' days after this, I carried off a ſecond ' bag, containing, as the former, five ' hundred crowns, of which I would ' receive one fourth only, notwithſtand- ' ing the preſſing inſtances of Gaſpard, ' that it ſhould be equally divided be- ' tween us.

' As ſoon as this young man found ' himſelf well ſtocked, and, conſe- ' quently, in a condition to ſatisfy his ' paſſion for women and play, he aban- ' doned himſelf entirely to both: he had ' even the misfortune to fall in love ' with one of thoſe famous coquettes, ' who devour and ſwallow the largeſt ' patrimonies in a very little time; and, ' being at a terrible expence on her ' account, laid me under the neceſſity ' of paying ſo many viſits to the ſtrong- ' box, that at length old Velaſquez ' perceived himſelf robbed. " Scipio," ' ſaid he one morning, " I muſt tell " thee a ſecret: ſomebody robs me, " my friend; my ſtrong-box has been " opened, and ſeveral bags taken out: " this is certain. Who muſt be taxed " with this theft? or rather, who " elſe than my ſon Gaſpard, who has " entered my chamber by ſtealth, or " been introduced by thee; for I am " tempted to believe thee his accom- " plice, though you ſeem to hate one " another ſo much. Nevertheleſs, I " will not liſten to my ſuſpicion, ſince " Father Alexis hath anſwered for thy " fidelity." I replied that, thank ' Heaven, I never coveted my neigh- ' bour's wealth; and accompanied that ' lye with hypocritical grimace, which ' ſerved inſtead of an apology.

' The old man, ſure enough, ſaid ' no more of the matter; but he did ' not leave off including me in his ſu- ' ſpicion; and taking his precautions ' againſt our attempts, ordered his ' ſtrong-box to be ſecured by another ' lock, the key of which he always ' kept in his pocket. By theſe means, ' all commerce between us and the ' bags being broken, we looked very ' ſilly, eſpecially Gaſpard, who being ' no longer able to gratify the extra- ' vagance of his nymph, was afraid of ' loſing the privilege of viſiting her. ' He had genius enough, however, to ' invent an expedient which ſupported ' his expence a few days longer: and ' that ingenious ſhift was, to appro- ' priate to himſelf, by way of loan, all ' my ſhare of the evacuations which I ' had performed in the ſtrong-box. I ' gave it all, to the very laſt piece; ' and this, methinks, may paſs for an- ' ticipated reſtitution which I made to ' the old merchant in the perſon of his ' heir.

' The young man, when he had ex- ' hauſted this reſource, conſidering that ' he had now none left, fell into a pro-

' found

'found and gloomy fit of melancholy, 'which gradually disordered his rea- 'son. He looked upon his father as 'the only plague of his life; he was 'seized with the most violent despair; 'and, without listening to the voice of 'nature, the wretch conceived the hor- 'rible design of poisoning his parent. 'He not only communicated this exe- 'crable project to me, but even pro- 'posed that I should be the instrument 'of his vengeance. Being struck with 'horror at the proposal, "Sir," said 'I, "is it possible that you should be "so abandoned by Heaven, as to form "this abominable resolution? What! "are you capable of murdering the "author of your own being? Shall it "be said, that in Spain, in the very "bosom of Christianity, a crime was "committed, the very idea of which "raises horror in the most barbarous "nations? No, my dear master," 'added I, falling on my knees before 'him; "no; you will not commit "an action which would justly incense "the whole world against you, and "be attended with the most infamous "chastisement."

'I said a great many things more to 'dissuade Gaspard from such a guilty 'undertaking. I don't know where I 'found all the arguments of a virtu- 'ous man, which I used to combat 'his despair: but, certain it is, I spoke 'like a doctor of Salamanca, though 'I was but a boy, and no other than 'the son of Coscolina. Nevertheless, 'in vain did I represent to him, that 'he ought to reflect seriously, and 'courageously repel those detestable 'sentiments which had taken possession 'of his soul. All my eloquence was 'ineffectual: he hung his head, and 'remained in sullen silence; so that I 'concluded he would not swerve from 'his resolution, notwithstanding all I 'could say.

'Whereupon I went and demanded 'a private conversation with my old 'master; to whom, when we were shut 'up in a room together, I said, "Suf- "fer me, Sir, to throw myself at your "feet, and implore your mercy." 'So saying, I fell down before him 'in great agitation, with my counte- 'nance bathed in tears. The mer- 'chant, surprized at my prostration, 'and the disorder of my looks, asked 'what I had done. "A deed," I re- 'plied, "of which I now heartily re- "pent, and with which I will upbraid "myself as long as I live. I have "been weak enough to listen to your "son, and to assist him in stealing "your money." I then made a sin- 'cere confession of all that had passed 'on that subject: after which I gave 'him an account of the conversation 'I had with Gaspard, whose design I 'revealed, without forgetting the least 'circumstance.

'Bad as his opinion of his son was, 'old Velasquez could scarce credit my 'information, the truth of which, how- 'ever, having no reason to doubt, "Scipio," said he, raising me, for I 'was still on my knees, "I pardon "thee, in consideration of the im- "portant notice thou hast given me. "Gaspard," added he, raising his voice, "Gaspard has a design upon my life! "Ah, ungrateful son! ah, monster! "who had better been stifled in the "birth than allowed to live and be- "come a parricide! What cause hast "thou to attempt my life! I allow "thee a reasonable yearly sum for thy "pleasures, and thou art not satisfied! "Must I permit thee to squander a- "way my whole fortune!" Having 'uttered this bitter apostrophe, he laid 'injunctions upon me to keep the 'secret, and said he would consider 'what was to be done in such a de- 'licate conjuncture.

'I was very anxious to know what 'resolution this unfortunate father 'would take, when that very day he 'sent for Gaspard, and spoke thus to 'him, without manifesting a tittle of 'what he had in his head. "Son, I "have received a letter from Merida, "importing, that if you chuse to mar- "ry, you may have a maiden of that "place, who is but fifteen years old, "perfectly handsome, and mistress of "a good fortune: if you have no re- "luctance to the marriage, we will "set out early to-morrow for Merida, "visit the lady who is proposed, and, "if you find her to your liking, you "shall espouse her forthwith." Gas- 'pard, hearing mention made of a good 'fortune, which he thought was already 'in his clutches, answered without he- 'sitation, that he was ready to go: 'so that next mornisg, at day-break, 'they departed by themselves, mount- 'ed on two good mules.

'When

'When they had got as far as the 'mountains of Feſira, into a place as 'much frequented by robbers as dread-'ed by travellers, Balthazar alighted, 'deſiring his ſon to do the ſame. The 'young man obeyed, and aſked the 'reaſon of their quitting their mules 'in that place. "I will tell thee," 'anſwered the old man, darting at him 'a look in which his grief and indig-'nation were painted, "we have no "buſineſs at Merida; and the marriage "which I mentioned is only a fable "I invented to bring thee thither. I "am not ignorant, ungrateful and "unnatural ſon! I am not ignorant "of the crime which thou haſt hatch-"ed; I know that I am to be preſented "with poiſon prepared by thee: but, "fool that thou art, doſt thou flatter "thyſelf that thou canſt deprive me "of my life in that manner with im-"punity! Thou art miſtaken; thy "guilt would ſoon be diſcovered, and "thou wouldſt periſh by the hand of "the hangman. There is," added he, "a ſurer method of ſatisfying thy rage, "without expoſing thyſelf to an ig-"nominious death: we are here with-"out witneſſes, in a place where mur-"ders are committed every day; ſince "thou art ſo eſtranged from my blood, "plunge thy poniard into my boſom, "and the murder will be imputed "to robbers!" So ſaying, Balthazar 'baring his breaſt, and pointing to his 'heart, "Here, Gaſpard!" added he, "ſtrike the mortal blow, and puniſh "me for having given being to ſuch "a wretch as thee!"

'Young Velaſquez, thunderſtruck 'at theſe words, far from ſeeking to 'juſtify himſelf, fell without ſenſe or 'motion at his father's feet. The 'good old man, ſeeing him in that 'condition, which ſeemed to be the 'beginning of repentance, could not 'help yielding to his paternal weak-'neſs, and of flying to his aſſiſtance: 'but Gaſpard no ſooner recovered the 'uſe of his reaſon, than, being unable 'to bear the preſence of a father ſo 'juſtly incenſed, he made an effort to 'get up, mounted his mule, and rode 'off without ſpeaking a word. Bal-'thazar let him go, and leaving him 'to the remorſe of his own conſcience, 'returned to Cordova; where, ſix 'months after, he learned that his ſon 'had thrown himſelf into the mo-'naſtery of Carthuſians at Seville, 'there to paſs the reſt of his days in 'penitence.

CHAP. XII.

THE CONCLUSION OF SCIPIO'S HISTORY.

'BAD example ſometimes produces 'good effects. The conduct 'of young Velaſquez made me reflect 'ſeriouſly upon my own. I began to 'combat my thieviſh inclinations, and 'live like an honeſt man. The habit 'of ſeizing all the money I could lay 'my hands on, was ſo much confirmed 'in me, by repeated acts, that it was 'not eaſily vanquiſhed. Nevertheleſs, 'I did not deſpair of ſucceeding, ima-'gining, that to become virtuous, re-'quired only a ſincere deſire of being 'ſo. I therefore undertook this great 'work, and Heaven ſeemed to bleſs 'my efforts; I no longer beheld the 'old merchant's ſtrong-box with a co-'vetous eye; and I believe, that, had 'it been in my power, I ſhould not 'have touched one of his bags: I own, 'however, that it would have been 'very imprudent in him to put my 'infant integrity to ſuch a proof; and 'therefore Velaſquez took care not to 'do it.

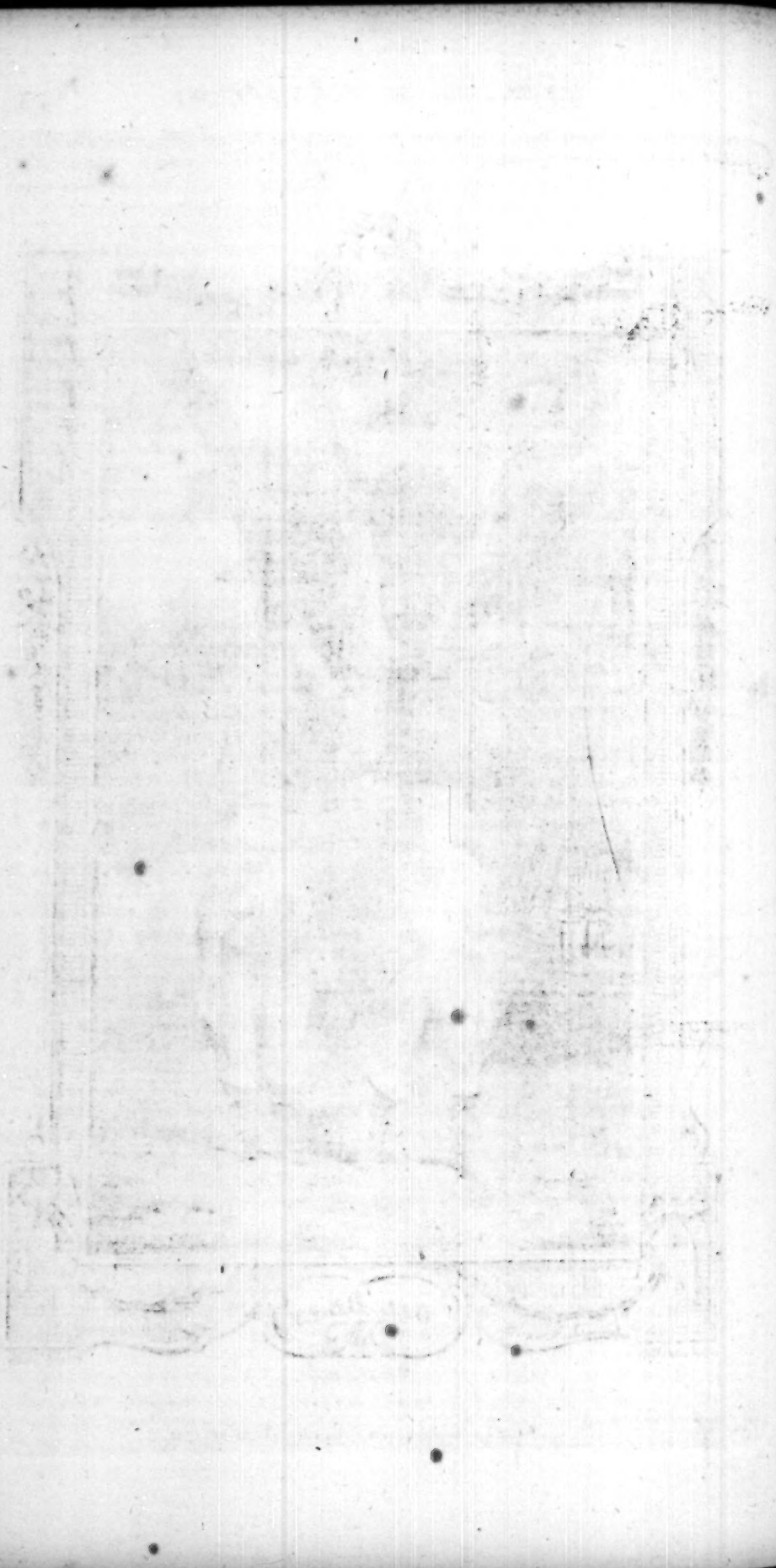
'Don Manriquez de Medrano, a 'young gentleman and knight of the or-'der of Alcantara, came frequently to 'our houſe. We had his cuſtom; and if 'he was not the beſt, he was, at leaſt, the 'moſt noble of thoſe who uſed the ſhop. 'I had the good fortune to pleaſe that 'cavalier, who, every time he met me, 'encouraged me to ſpeak, and ſeemed 'to liſten with pleaſure to what I ſaid. "Scipio," ſaid he one day, "if I had "a lacquey of thy humour, I ſhould "think myſelf in poſſeſſion of a trea-"ſure; and if thou didſt not belong "to a man for whom I have a regard, I "would do my endeavour to debauch "thee from his ſervice."—"Sir," 'ſaid I, "you would find it a very "eaſy taſk; for I have an inclination "to ſerve people of quality: that is "my foible; I am charmed by their "eaſy behaviour."—"If that be the "caſe," replied Don Manriquez, "I "will deſire Signior Balthazar to con-"ſent to thy leaving him, and coming

"into

pa: 346

Plate IX.

Published as the Act directs, by Harrison & Co. Feb.16th 1781.



" into my ſervice; I don't believe he " will refuſe me that favour." Indeed Velaſquez granted it the more eaſily, as he did not think the loſs of a roguiſh lacquey irreparable: for my own part, I was glad of the change; the valet of a citizen appearing to me a mere beggar, in compariſon to the lacquey of a knight of Alcantara.

To draw a faithful picture of my new patron, I muſt tell you, that he was a cavalier endued with a moſt amiable perſon, and with ſuch ſweetneſs of temper and cultivated underſtanding, as captivated every body who knew him: beſides he had a great deal of courage and probity, and wanted nothing but fortune. Being cadet of a family more illuſtrious than rich, he was obliged to ſubſiſt at the expence of an old aunt who lived at Toledo, and who, loving him as her own ſon, took care to furniſh him with what money he wanted. He went always handſomely dreſſed, and was perfectly well received every where: he viſited the principal ladies of the city, and among others, the Marchioneſs of Almenara, a widow of ſeventy-two years of age, who, by her engaging behaviour and agreeable wit, allured the whole nobility of Cordova to her houſe. Men as well as women delighted in her converſation, and her family was ſtyled, *the polite company*.

My maſter, who was one of the moſt aſſiduous viſitors of that lady, came home from her houſe, one evening, with an enlivened look that was not natural to him: upon which, I ſaid, "Signior, you ſeem to be " ſtrangely elevated; may your faith" ful ſervant aſk the cauſe? hath not " ſomething extraordinary happened?" The knight ſmiled at that queſtion, and owned he was actually engroſſed by a ſerious converſation which he had enjoyed with the Marchioneſs of Almenara. "I heartily wiſh," ſaid I, laughing, "that the ſuperannu" ated toaſt may have made a declara" tion of love to you."—"Jeſting a" part," anſwered he; "know, my " friend, that I am really beloved by " the marchioneſs. "Chevalier," " ſaid ſhe to me, "I know the ſmall" neſs of your fortune, as well as the " nobleneſs of your birth: I have an " inclination for you, and am reſolved " to make you eaſy in your circum" ſtances, by marrying you, as I can " not decently make your fortune any " other way. I know very well that " this marriage will bring upon me the " ridicule of the world; that ſcandal " will be very buſy at my expence; " and that, in ſhort, I ſhall paſs for " an old fool, who muſt needs have " another huſband. No matter; I " intend to deſpiſe ſlander, in order to " make you happy. All that I fear," " added ſhe, "is, that you may poſ" ſibly have a reluctance to comply " with my intentions." This," continued the knight, "is the ſub" ject of her diſcourſe, which ſur" prized me the more, as ſhe is the " moſt virtuous and prudent woman " of Cordova. I anſwered, therefore, " I was aſtoniſhed ſhe ſhould do me " the honour of offering me her hand; " ſhe who had always perſiſted in the " reſolution of preſerving her widow" hood to the laſt. To this ſhe replied, " that having a conſiderable eſtate, ſhe " ſhould be glad in her life-time to " ſhare it with a man of honour whom " ſhe eſteemed."—"You are then, I " ſuppoſe," ſaid I, "determined to ha" zard the leap."—"Can'ſt thou doubt " it?" he replied: "the marchioneſs " poſſeſſes immenſe wealth, together " with excellent qualities both of the " heart and head; and I muſt have loſt " my judgment indeed, if I rejected " ſuch an advantageous ſettlement."

I very much approved of my maſter's deſign to lay hold of this fair occaſion to make his fortune, and even adviſed him to puſh matters, ſo much was I afraid to ſee her inclinations change. Luckily, the lady, who had the affair ſtill more at heart than I had, gave ſuch expeditious orders, that the preparations were ſoon made for her marriage. As ſoon as it was known at Cordova, that the old Marchioneſs of Almenara was going to marry young Don Manuquez de Medrano, the wits began to make themſelves merry at the widow's expence: but in vain did they exhauſt their ſtock of raillery; they could not divert her from her deſign; ſhe let the whole city talk, and followed her knight to the altar: their nuptials were celebrated with ſuch ſplendor as afforded new matter for ſcandal. "The bride," ſaid they,

"might have, at leaſt, for the ſake of "decency, ſuppreſſed all noiſe and "pomp, which but ill becomes old wi- "dows who marry young huſbands."

'The marchioneſs, inſtead of ap- 'pearing aſhamed of being, at her 'age, wife to the chevalier, indulged 'herſelf, without conſtraint, in the 'joy which ſhe felt on this occa- 'ſion; ſhe had a grand entertainment 'at her houſe, accompanied by a con- 'cert of muſick, and the feaſt ended 'in a ball, at which were preſent 'all the nobility of Cordova. To- 'wards the end of the ball, our new- 'married couple ſlipped off and met in 'an apartment, where, being ſhut up 'with a waiting-woman and me, the 'marchioneſs addreſſed herſelf to my 'maſter in theſe words: "Don Man- "riquez, this is your apartment: mine "is in another part of the houſe: we "will paſs the night in ſeparate cham- "bers, and in the day we will live "together like mother and ſon." The 'knight was at firſt miſtaken, and be- 'lieved that the lady talked thus only 'to engage him to offer ſoft violence 'to her delicacy: imagining, there- 'fore, that he ought, out of pure po- 'liteneſs, to act the paſſionate lover, 'he approached her, and eagerly en- 'deavoured to ſerve her in quality of 'valet de chambre; but ſhe, far from 'allowing him to undreſs her, puſhed 'him away with a ſerious air, ſaying, "Hold, Don Manriquez; if you take "me for one of thoſe amorous old wi- "dows who marry again out of frailty, "you are deceived; I did not eſpouſe "you to make you buy the advantages "which you will reap from our con- "tract of marriage; theſe are the pure "offerings of my heart, and I exact "nothing in return but ſentiments of "friendſhip." So ſaying, ſhe left my 'maſter and me in our apartment, and 'retired into her own, with her wait- 'ing-maid, abſolutely forbidding the 'chevalier to follow her.

'After her retreat, we remained a 'good while confounded at what we 'had heard. "Scipio," ſaid my ma- 'ſter, "didſt thou ever hear ſuch a "diſcourſe as that of the marchioneſs? "What doſt thou think of ſuch a "lady?"—"I think, Sir," anſwered 'I, "that ſhe has not her fellow; "you are happy in having ſuch a wife, "which is like the poſſeſſion of a be- "nefice without cure of ſouls."— "As for my part," replied Don Man- 'riquez, "I admire a ſpouſe of ſuch "an ineſtimable character, and I in- "tend to compenſate, with all ima- "ginable attention, the ſacrifice which "ſhe makes to her delicacy." Having 'converſed ſome time about the lady, 'we went to reſt; I upon a truckle- 'bed in a wardrobe, and my maſter 'in a fine bed prepared for him, where 'I believe, at bottom, he was not ſorry 'to lie alone, and to be quit for his 'fear only.

'The rejoicings began again next 'day, and the new-married lady ap- 'peared in ſuch good humour as to 'afford ſcope to the railers. She was 'the firſt to laugh at what they ſaid; 'nay, even excited others to laugh, 'by receiving their ſallies with a good 'grace. The knight, for his part, 'ſeemed no leſs ſatisfied with his 'ſpouſe; and, by the tender glances 'with which he looked and ſpoke to 'her, one would have thought that old 'age was his taſte. This happy couple 'had in the evening a new converſa- 'tion, in which it was decided, that, 'without diſturbing one another, they 'ſhould live, for the future, in the 'ſame manner as before marriage: 'meanwhile I muſt do Don Manri- 'quez the juſtice to ſay, that, out of 'conſideration for his wife, he did what 'few huſbands would have done in 'his place: he abandoned a girl in 'the city, whom he loved, and of 'whom he was beloved; being re- 'ſolved, as he ſaid, to maintain no 'commerce which would ſeem to in- 'ſult the delicate conduct of his wife 'towards him.

'While he gave this old lady ſuch 'ſtrong marks of gratitude, ſhe re- 'paid them with uſury, though ſhe 'was ignorant of this behaviour; and 'made him maſter of her ſtrong-box, 'which was even better repleniſhed 'than that of Velaſquez. As ſhe had 'retrenched her houſe-keeping during 'her widowhood, ſhe put it again on 'the ſame footing on which it had 'been in the life-time of her firſt huſ- 'band: ſhe increaſed the number of 'her ſervants, filled her ſtable with 'horſes and mules; in a word, by her 'generoſity, the chevalier, who was 'the pooreſt, became the richeſt knight 'of Alcantara. You will aſk, per-

'haps,

'haps, what I got by all this? I received fifty piſtoles from my miſtreſs, and one hundred from my maſter, who, moreover, made me his ſecretary, with an appointment of five hundred crowns; he had even ſo much confidence in my integrity, that he created me his treaſurer.'

'His treaſurer!' cried I, interrupting Scipio, with a loud laugh. 'Yes, Sir,' he replied with a dry ſerious look; 'no leſs than his treaſurer; and I'll venture to ſay, that I acquitted myſelf in that employment with honour. True it is, I am perhaps ſomewhat indebted to caſh: for, as I took my wages per advance, and quitted the knight's ſervice ſuddenly, it is not impoſſible that I may now be in arrears: at any rate, it is the laſt reproach that I have deſerved, having always acted with probity ſince that time.

'I was, therefore,' continued the ſon of Coſcolina, 'ſecretary and treaſurer to Don Manriquez, who ſeemed as well ſatisfied with me as I was with him; when he received a letter from Toledo, importing, that his aunt Donna Theodora Moſcoſo was at the point of death. He ſet out inſtantly to ſee that lady, who had been a mother to him for many years; and I accompanied him in this journey, together with a valet de chambre and one lacquey. Being all mounted on the beſt horſes in our ſtables, we ſoon got to Toledo, where we found Donna Theodora in ſuch a condition as gave us hopes that ſhe would not die of that diſtemper; and truly our prognoſtick, though contrary to that of an old phyſician who attended her, was verified by the event.

'While the health of our good aunt was re-eſtabliſhing, leſs, perhaps, by the remedies ſhe took, than by the preſence of her dear nephew, Mr. Treaſurer paſſed his time as agreeably as he could, with young people, whoſe acquaintance ſoon introduced him to occaſions of ſpending his money. They ſometimes carried me to the tennis-court, where they engaged me in play; and, as I was not ſo expert a gameſter as my maſter Don Abel, I loſt much oftener than I won. I conceived inſenſibly an inclination for play; and if I had entirely abandoned myſelf to that paſſion, it would, doubtleſs, have compelled me to take from our caſh ſome quarters of my allowance per advance; but luckily, love ſaved both my own virtue and my maſter's money. One day, as I paſſed by the church de los Reyes I perceived through a lattice, the curtains of which were withdrawn, a young maid who ſeemed rather a divinity than a mortal. I would uſe a term ſtill ſtronger, if there was any, to denote the impreſſion which ſhe made upon my heart. I made it my buſineſs to get information about her; and, by dint of enquiry, learned that her name was Beatrice, and that ſhe was waiting-maid to Donna Julia, ſecond daughter of the Count de Polan.'

Beatrice interrupted Scipio with a loud laugh; then addreſſing herſelf to my wife, 'Beautiful Antonia,' ſaid ſhe, 'pray, look ſtedfaſtly at me. Don't you think I have the air of a divinity?'—'You had at that time, in my eyes,' ſaid Scipio to her; 'and ſince I no longer ſuſpect your fidelity, you ſeem to me fairer than ever.' My ſecretary, after ſuch a gallant repartee, purſued his hiſtory thus.

'This diſcovery quite inflamed me; not indeed with a legitimate ardour, for I imagined that I ſhould eaſily triumph over her virtue, by preſents capable of ſhaking it; but I judged amiſs of the chaſte Beatrice. In vain did I offer her (by means of mercenary women) my purſe and affection; ſhe rejected my propoſals with diſdain. Her reſiſtance encreaſed my deſires. I had recourſe to the laſt expedient, and offered my hand, which ſhe accepted, when ſhe knew that I was ſecretary and treaſurer to Don Manriquez. As we thought it convenient to conceal our marriage for ſome time, we were wedded privately, in preſence of Dame Lorença Sephora, governeſs of Seraphina, and ſome other domeſticks belonging to the Duke de Polan. As ſoon as I had married Beatrice, ſhe facilitated the means of ſeeing and converſing with her at night in the garden, in which I introduced myſelf by a little door, of which ſhe gave me the key. Never were man and wife happier in one another than Beatrice and I. We waited with equal impatience for

'the hour of rendezvous, ran thither 'with equal eagerneſs; and the time 'which we ſpent together, though it 'was ſometimes pretty long, ſeemed 'but a moment to both.

'One night, which was as fatal to 'me as the others had been propitious, 'I was ſurprized, at entering the gar-'den, to find the little door open. I 'was alarmed by this uncommon event, 'from whence I conceived a bad omen. 'I grew pale and trembled, as if I had 'foreſeen what was to happen; and 'advancing in the dark towards an ar-'bour where I uſed to converſe with 'my wife, I heard the voice of a man. 'I ſtopped all of a ſudden to liſten, and 'my ear was immediately ſaluted with 'theſe words, "Don't let me languiſh "then, my dear Beatrice! compleat "my happineſs, and conſider that your "fortune is connected with it." In-ſtead of having patience to hear him 'to an end, I thought there was no 'occaſion for knowing more. A jea-'lous fury took poſſeſſion of my ſoul; 'and, breathing nothing but venge-'ance, I drew my ſword, and went 'haſtily into the arbour. "Ah! cow-"ardly ſeducer!" cried I; "whoſo-"ever thou art, thou ſhalt ſooner de-"prive me of life than rob me of my "honour." So ſaying, I attacked the 'cavalier who was talking to Beatrice. 'He put himſelf immediately into a 'poſture of defence, and fought like 'a man who underſtood the art much 'better than I, who had only received 'a few leſſons at Cordova. Never-'theleſs, ſwordſman as he was, I 'made a puſh which he could not 'parry, or rather his foot ſlipped. I 'ſaw him fall; and, imagining that I 'had wounded him mortally, fled as 'faſt as my legs could carry me, 'without anſwering Beatrice, who 'called me.'

'Yes, really,' ſaid his wife, inter-rupting him, 'I called in order to un-'deceive him. The cavalier with whom 'I converſed was no other than Don 'Fernando de Leyva. That nobleman, 'who loved my miſtreſs Julia, had 'formed a reſolution of carrying her 'off by force, believing it impoſſible 'to obtain her by any other means; 'and I myſelf had given him a meet-'ing in the garden, to concert with 'him the item of that undertaking, 'on which he aſſured me my fortune 'depended: but in vain did I call my 'huſband; he avoided me as a wife 'who had been unfaithful to him.'

'My ſituation at that time was ſuch,' reſumed Scipio, 'as rendered me capa-'ble of committing any thing. Thoſe 'who know by experience what jea-'louſy is, and to what extravagance 'it drives the ſoundeſt underſtandings, 'will not be ſurprized at the diſorder 'which it produced in my weak brain. 'I underwent a momentary tranſition 'from one extreme to another. I felt 'the emotions of hatred ſucceed thoſe 'of tenderneſs, which I had entertain-'ed for my wife a moment before, and 'made an oath to abandon and baniſh 'her from my memory. Beſides, I 'thought I had killed a cavalier; and, 'in that opinion, being afraid of fall-'ing into the hands of juſtice, ſuffered 'that inconceivable anxiety which in-'ceſſantly purſues, like a fury, the man 'who has done a bad action. In this 'horrible ſituation, my whole care be-'ing to eſcape, I did not go home, 'but inſtantly quitted Toledo, having 'no other baggage than the cloaths on 'my back. True, indeed, I had in 'my pocket ſixty piſtoles, which were 'a pretty good reſource to a young 'man who propoſed to live all his life 'in ſervice.

'I walked all night long, or rather 'ran; for the images of alguazils, 'which continually haunted my ima-'gination, ſupplied me ſtill with new 'vigour; and the morning ſurprized 'me between Rodillas and Maqueda. 'When I arrived at this laſt town, 'finding myſelf a little fatigued, I 'went into the church as ſoon as it 'was open; and, after having put up 'a ſhort prayer, ſat down upon a 'bench to reſt me. I began to muſe 'upon my preſent ſituation, which, 'Heaven knows, was perplexing e-'nough; but I had not time to make 'long reflections. I heard the church 'echo with two or three ſmacks of a 'whip, which making me conclude 'that a carrier was paſſing, I got up 'immediately to ſee whether or not 'I was miſtaken; and, by that time 'I got to the door, perceived one, 'who, being mounted on a mule, lead 'two more in a leaſh. "Stop, friend," 'ſaid I to him; "where are thoſe "mules a-going?"—"To Madrid," 'anſwered he. "I came hither with

"two good Dominican monks, and "am going back myſelf."

'The opportunity that offered of 'travelling to Madrid, inſpired me 'with an inclination to go thither. I 'made a bargain with the carrier, 'mounted one of his mules, and we 'puſhed forwards for Illeſcas, where 'we were to ſleep. Scarce had we got 'out of Maqueda, when the carrier, 'who was a man between thirty-'five and forty years of age, thun-'dered out church-ſinging with vaſt 'vociferation: he began with the 'prayers which the canons ſing at 'mattins, then ſung the *credo*, as it 'is ſung at high maſs; and paſſing on 'to veſpers, pronounced them, with-'out even ſparing the *magnificat*. Al-'though the rogue ſtunned me with 'his noiſe, I could not help laughing, 'and even encouraged him to conti-'nue, when he was obliged to ſtop and 'take breath. "Courage, friend!" 'ſaid I to him; "pray, go on: if Hea-"ven hath given you good lungs, I "ſee you don't put them to a bad "uſe."—"No, indeed," cried he; "I am not, thank God, like the "moſt part of carriers, who ſing no-"thing but infamous or impious "ſongs: I would not even repeat bal-"lads made upon our wars with the "Moors; for theſe are things frivo-"lous, if not wicked."—"You have," 'ſaid I, "a purity of heart rarely to "be met with among muleteers: with "this extreme delicacy in the choice "of your ſongs, have you likewiſe "made a vow of chaſtity with regard "to the young wenches who live at "inns upon the road?"—"Certainly," 'anſwered he. "Continence is ano-"ther thing on which I pique my-"ſelf in theſe ſort of places, where "I mind nothing but my mules." I 'was a little aſtoniſhed to hear this 'phœnix of carriers talk in ſuch a 'manner; and looking upon him as 'a man of honeſty and diſcretion, en-'tered into a converſation with him 'after he had ſung his fill.

'We arrived at Illeſcas in the twi-'light; where, alighting at an inn, I 'left the care of the mules to my com-'panion, and went into the kitchen, 'where I ordered the landlord to pro-'cure a good ſupper. This he pro-'miſed to do ſo effectually, that I 'ſhould remember I had lodged at his 'houſe the longeſt day I had to live. "Aſk," ſaid he, "aſk your carrier "what ſort of a man I am. Ecod! "I will defy all the cooks of Madrid "and Toledo to make an *olla podrida* "comparable to thoſe that I compoſe. "I will treat you this night with a ra-"gout of rabbit dreſſed in my manner, "and you ſhall ſee whether or not I "have reaſon to boaſt of my ſkill." 'Thereupon, ſhewing me a ſauce-pan, 'wherein there was (as he ſaid) a young 'rabbit already minced; "There," 'added he, "is what I intend to give "you. When I have once put in ſome "pepper, ſalt, wine, a handful of ſweet "herbs, and other ingredients which "I uſe in my ſauces, I hope to ſerve "you in a little time with a ragout "worthy of a judge."

'The landlord, after having thus 'ſounded his own praiſe, began to 'dreſs ſupper; and, while it was do-'ing, I went into the hall, where, 'finding a kind of couch, I lay down 'to ſleep off my fatigue, having had 'no reſt the night before. In two hours 'the carrier awakening me, ſaid, "Ma-"ſter, your ſupper is ready; come, if "you pleaſe, and ſit down at table." 'There was one in another room, with 'two covers, at which my fellow-tra-'veller and I ſitting down, the ragout 'was ſerved. I attacked it with a 'greedy appetite, and found it of an 'exquiſite reliſh, whether hunger made 'me judge too favourable of it, or that 'my ſatisfaction was the effect of the 'cook's ſkill. We had alſo a plate of 'roaſt mutton; and I remarking that 'the carrier did honour to this laſt 'diſh only, aſked, why he abſtained 'from the other. He anſwered, with 'a ſmile, that he did not love ragouts. 'This reply, or rather the ſmile with 'which it was accompanied, ſeemed 'to me myſterious: "You conceal," 'ſaid I, "the true reaſon that hinders "you from eating the ragout; pray, "do me the pleaſure of letting me "know it."—"Since you are ſo cu-"rious to know it," he replied, "I "will tell you, that I have loathed all "theſe ſorts of ragouts, ſince, in go-"ing once from Toledo to Cuença, "they brought me for ſupper, at an inn, "an hathed cat inſtead of a rabbit, and "that gave me a diſguſt at all fricaſſees."

'The carrier had no ſooner ſpoke 'thoſe words, than, in ſpite of the

'hunger

'hunger that devoured me, my appetite forſook me all of a ſudden. I took it in my head that I had eaten of a pretended rabbit, and could no longer look at the ragout without making wry faces. My companion did not cure me of this conjecture, when he told me, that it was a common thing among the innkeepers of Spain, as well as the paſtry-cooks, to ſubſtitute that *quid pro quo*. This diſcourſe, you ſee, was very conſoling; and therefore I had not the leaſt inclination to return to the ragout, nor even to touch the roaſt meat, leſt the mutton might be as much ſophiſticated as the rabbit. I roſe from table, curſing the ragout, the landlord, and his inn; and, lying down again upon my ſettee, paſſed the reſt of the night more quietly than I had expected. Next morning early, after having paid the landlord as handſomely as if I had been extremely well treated, I departed from Illeſcas, my imagination ſtill ſo full of the ragout, that I fancied every animal which I ſaw was a cat.

'I arrived in good time at Madrid, where, as ſoon as I had ſatisfied my carrier, I hired a ſmall room near the Sun-gate. Mine eyes, though accuſtomed to quality, were dazzled by the great concourſe of noblemen who uſually appeared in the court-end of the town. I admired the prodigious quantity of coaches, and the infinite number of gentlemen, pages, and lacquies, who attended the great. My admiration redoubled, when, going to the king's levee, I beheld that monarch ſurrounded by his courtiers. I was charmed at the ſight, and ſaid within myſelf, "I am no longer ſurprized "at what I have heard, that one can"not poſſibly conceive the magnifi"cence of the court of Madrid, with"out being an eye-witneſs of it: I "am overjoyed at my coming hither, "where I foreſee I ſhall be able to do "ſomething." All that I could perform, however, was to contract a few unprofitable acquaintances. I gradually ſpent all my money, and thought myſelf very lucky in having an opportunity of beſtowing myſelf with all my merit, upon a pedant of Salamanca, whom a family-affair had brought to Madrid, where he was born, and with whom I grew acquainted by accident. I became his *factotum*; and, when he returned to the univerſity, followed him thither.

'The name of my new patron was Don Ignacio de Ipigna. He aſſumed the Don, becauſe he had been preceptor to a duke, who, by way of recompence, ſettled upon him a penſion for life; he enjoyed another as *emeritus* profeſſor of the college; and he drew yearly from the publick a revenue of two or three hundred piſtoles, by the books of dogmatical morality which he printed. The manner in which he compoſed his works well deſerves honourable mention. He ſpent almoſt all the day in reading Hebrew, Greek, and Latin authors, and in writing upon ſmall ſquares of paper each apothegm or brilliant thought which he met with. As theſe ſquares were filled, he employed me to ſtring them upon wire, in form of a garland, and each garland made a volume. What a world of bad books did we compoſe! every month almoſt we finiſhed two volumes, and immediately the preſs groaned with them. What was moſt ſurprizing, he publiſhed theſe his compilings as performances entirely new; and if the criticks thought proper to upbraid him with having pillaged the ancients, he would anſwer with moſt haughty aſſurance, "*Furto lætamur in ipſo*."

'He was alſo a great commentator; and there was ſo much erudition in his annotations, that he frequently made remarks on things ſcarce worthy to be obſerved; and ſometimes wrote upon his paper-ſquares paſſages from Heſiod, and other authors, very little to the purpoſe. That I improved my underſtanding in the ſervice of this virtuoſo, it would be ungrateful in me to deny. I brought my hand-writing to perfection by dint of tranſcribing his works; and as, in treating me like a pupil, rather than a valet, he took care to cultivate my capacity, he was alſo far from neglecting my morals. "Scipio," he would ſay, when he heard of any piece of knavery committed by a ſervant, "beware, my child, "of following the bad example of that "rogue; a valet ought to ſerve his ma-

"ſter

her with equal fidelity and zeal." In a word, Don Ignacio loſt no occaſion of inculcating virtue in me; and his exhortations had ſuch good effect that I was never in the leaſt tempted to play him a trick during the fifteen months which I ſpent in his houſe.

'I have already obſerved, that Dr. de Ipigna was originally of Madrid, where he had a kinſwoman called Catalina, chamber-maid to the prince's nurſe. This waiting-maid, who is the ſame whom I ſince made uſe of to procure Signior de Santillane's enlargement from the tower of Segovia, being deſirous of doing a good office for Don Ignacio, engaged her miſtreſs to aſk a benefice for him from the Duke of Lerma. That miniſter granted him a nomination to the archdeaconry of Grenada, which being a conquered country, is in the gift of the king. We ſet out for Madrid, as ſoon as we learned this piece of news, the doctor intending to thank his benefactreſſes before he departed to Grenada. I had more than one opportunity of ſeeing and ſpeaking to Catalina, who was pleaſed with my eaſy air and gay diſpoſition. For my part, I found her ſo much to my liking, that I could not help making ſuitable returns to the little marks of friendſhip which ſhe beſtowed upon me. In fine, we contracted a mutual attachment.—Forgive this confeſſion, my dear Beatrice: as I believed you falſe, that miſtake ought to ſcreen me from your reproaches.

'Meanwhile Dr. Don Ignacio, preparing for his departure to Grenada, his relation and I, frightened at the ſeparation that threatened us, had recourſe to an expedient which preſerved us from that misfortune. I feigned myſelf ſick, complained of my head and breaſt, and affected all the ſymptoms of a moſt violent diſtemper. My maſter called a phyſician, who having examined me with care, ſincerely owned that my diſtemper was a very ſerious matter; and that, in all likelihood, I ſhould keep my chamber a long time.

'The doctor, impatient to be at his cathedral, did not think proper to delay his departure, but took another young man into his ſervice, leaving me to the care of a nurſe, with whom he depoſited a ſum of money, to defray the expence of my funeral if I ſhould die, or to recompenſe my ſervice if I ſhould recover of my diſeaſe. As ſoon as I underſtood that Don Ignacio was gone, all my complaints vaniſhed. I got out of bed, diſmiſſed my phyſician who had ſo much penetration, and got rid of my nurſe, who ſtole more than half of the money with which ſhe had been entruſted in my behalf. While I acted this part, Catalina performed another with her miſtreſs Donna Anna de Guerva, whom, by perſuading her that I was admirable in intrigues, ſhe induced to chuſe me for one of her agents. Madam Nurſe, whom her avarice always ſtimulated to new undertakings, having occaſion for ſuch people, received me into her family, and in a little time put my abilities to the proof. She gave me commiſſions which required ſome addreſs; and, without vanity, I did not acquit myſelf amiſs: wherefore ſhe was as well pleaſed with me as I had cauſe to be diſſatisfied with her. This lady was ſo covetous, that ſhe would not allow me the leaſt ſhare of the fruits which ſhe reaped from my induſtry and trouble. She imagined, that ſhe acted with great generoſity in paying my wages punctually. This exceſs of avarice would have ſoon induced me to quit her ſervice, had I not been retained by the affection of Catalina, which kindling every day more and more, ſhe propoſed, in a formal manner, that I ſhould take her to wife.

"Softly, my dear," ſaid I; "that "ceremony can't be performed be"tween us ſo ſoon. I muſt firſt be "convinced of the death of a young "woman who got the ſtart of you, and "to whom (for my ſins) I am mar"ried."—"Not you, indeed," replied Catalina; "you only ſay ſo "to conceal, in a polite manner, the "reluctance you have to wed me."

'In vain did I proteſt that I ſpoke the truth. She looked upon my ſincere confeſſion as a ſhift; and, being offended at it, changed her behaviour towards me. We did not quarrel; but our correſpondence viſibly coolled, and we no longer retained for one another any other ſentiments

'than

'than thoſe of decency and common
'regard.

'At this juncture, I heard that Sig-
'nior Gil Blas de Santillane, ſecre-
'tary to the prime-miniſter of the
'Spaniſh monarchy, wanted a lac-
'quey; and this place flattered me the
'more, as it was repreſented the moſt
'agreeable one that I could poſſeſs.
"Signior de Santillane," ſaid people
'to me, "is a perſon beloved by the
"Duke of Lerma, and of conſequence
"cannot fail of puſhing his fortune a
"great way: beſides, he is very ge-
"nerous; ſo that, in managing his
"affairs, you will effectually improve
"your own." I did not neglect this
'opportunity. I went immediately,
'and preſented myſelf to Signior Gil
'Blas, for whom at firſt ſight I found
'a growing inclination, and who ad-
'mitted me into his ſervice on account
'of my phyſiognomy. I did not he-
'ſitate on quitting the nurſe for him;
'and, if it pleaſe Heaven, he ſhall be
'my laſt maſter.'

Here Scipio finiſhed his hiſtory; then addreſſing himſelf to me, 'Sig-
'nior de Santillane,' ſaid he, 'pray
'witneſs for me to theſe ladies, that
'you have always found me a zealous
'and faithful ſervant. I have need
'of your teſtimony to perſuade them
'that the ſon of Coſcolina has purged
'his morals, and that virtuous ſenti-
'ments have ſucceeded his vicious in-
'clination.'

'Yes,' ladies,' ſaid I, 'this is
'what I can anſwer for: if Scipio, in
'his childhood, was a real *picaro*, he
'has corrected his conduct ſo well
'ſince that time, that he is now the
'model of a perfect ſervant. Far
'from having cauſe to blame his be-
'haviour towards me, I muſt own
'that I lie under great obligations to
'him. The night on which I was ap-
'prehended, to be carried to the tower
'of Segovia, he ſaved from pillage
'and ſecured a part of my effects,
'which he might have appropriated to
'himſelf with impunity. He not on-
'ly preſerved my money, but alſo,
'through pure friendſhip, came and
'ſhut himſelf up with me in priſon,
'preferring the melancholy pleaſure
'of ſharing my ſorrows to all the
'charms of liberty.'

END OF THE TENTH BOOK.

THE

THE

ADVENTURES

OF

GIL BLAS

OF

SANTILLANE.

BOOK XI.

CHAP. I.

GIL BLAS IS OVERWHELMED WITH JOY, WHICH IS DISTURBED BY A MELANCHOLY EVENT. SUCH CHANGES HAPPEN AT COURT, AS INDUCE SANTILLANE TO GO THITHER AGAIN.

I Have already obſerved, that there was great harmony between Antonia and Beatrice; the laſt being uſed to live like a ſubmiſſive waiting-woman, and the other habituating herſelf to act the miſtreſs. Scipio and I were huſbands of too much gallantry, and too well beloved by our wives, to be long without children: they grew pregnant almoſt at the ſame time. Beatrice, who was the firſt delivered, brought into the world a girl; and a few days after, Antonia crowned my happineſs in bringing forth a boy. I ſent my ſecretary to Valencia with this piece of news for the governor, who came to Lirias with Seraphina, and the Marchioneſs of Pliego, to ſtand godmothers to the children, being pleaſed to add this token of affection to thoſe I had already received. My ſon, whoſe godfather and godmother were that nobleman and the marchioneſs, was chriſtened Alphonſo; and my lady governeſs, willing that I ſhould have the honour of being doubly her goſſip, ſtood with me for Scipio's daughter, to whom we gave the name of Seraphina.

Not only the people of my family were rejoiced at the birth of my ſon, the inhabitants of Lirias likewiſe celebrated it by feaſts; which ſhewed that the whole village partook of their maſter's pleaſure. But, alas! our rejoicings were not of long duration; or rather, they were all of a ſudden converted into groans, complaints, and lamentations, by an event which more than twenty years have not been able to make me forget, and which will ever be preſent to my thoughts: my ſon died; and his mother, though ſafely delivered, ſoon followed him; a violent fever robbed me of my dear wife, fourteen months after we had been married! Let the reader conceive, if poſſible, the ſorrow with which I was ſeized. I fell into a ſtate of ſtupid de-

jection; and felt my loſs ſo much, that I ſeemed quite inſenſible. I was in this condition five or ſix days, during which I would take no ſuſtenance; and, had it not been for Scipio, I believe I ſhould either have let myſelf die of hunger, or have loſt my reaſon entirely; but that dexterous ſecretary found means to beguile my grief by conforming himſelf to it; he made me ſwallow broths, by the art of preſenting them with ſuch a mortified look, as if he gave them, not ſo much with a view of preſerving my life, as of nurſing my affliction.

This affectionate ſervant having written to Don Alphonſo an account of my misfortune, and the deplorable ſituation in which I was, that tender and compaſſionate nobleman, that generous friend, repaired immediately to Lirias. I cannot, without being melted, recal the moment in which he preſented himſelf to my view: 'My dear Santillane!' ſaid he, embracing me, 'I am not 'come hither to conſole you; I am 'come to mourn with you for Anto-'nia, as you would mourn with me, 'had Fate robbed me of my Seraphina.' In effect, he ſhed tears, and mingled his ſighs with mine: ſo that, overwhelmed as I was with ſorrow, I had a lively ſenſe of Don Alphonſo's goodneſs.

This governor having had a long conference with Scipio about the means of vanquiſhing my grief, they concluded that I muſt, for ſome time, be removed from Lirias, where every thing recalled inceſſantly to my mind the image of my poor Antonia. Upon this, Don Cæſar's ſon propoſed to carry me with him to Valencia, and my ſecretary ſeconded him ſo well, that I yielded to his propoſal. I left Scipio and his wife at my houſe, every part of which, indeed, ſerved only to increaſe my affliction, and ſet out with the governor. When I arrived at Valencia, Don Cæſar and his daughter-in-law ſpared nothing to divert my chagrin; they entertained me by turns with all the amuſements that ſeemed proper to diſpel it; but, in ſpite of all their endeavours, I continued as much as ever plunged in the moſt profound melancholy. It was not Scipio's fault that I did not reſume my tranquillity: he came often from Lirias to Valencia, to know how I was, and returned ſad or gay as he perceived me more or leſs diſpoſed to receive conſolation.

One morning, entering my chamber, 'Sir,' ſaid he, with great emotion, 'there is a report in the city which in-'tereſts the whole kingdom; it is ſaid 'that Philip the Third is no more, and 'that the prince his ſon is now upon 'the throne: nay, more,' added he, 'that the Cardinal Duke of Lerma has 'loſt his poſt; that he is even forbid 'the court; and that Don Gaſpard de 'Guzman, Count d'Olivarez, is now 'prime-miniſter.' I felt myſelf agitated by this piece of news, without knowing wherefore; and Scipio perceiving it, aſked if I was any how affected by this great change. 'Why 'ſhould it affect me, my child?' ſaid I; 'I have quitted the court, and ought 'to look with indifference upon all 'the changes that can happen there.'

'For a man of your age,' replied the ſon of Coſcolina, 'you are very 'much detached from the world; were 'I in your place, I ſhould have a 'longing deſire to go to Madrid, and 'ſhew my face to the young monarch, 'to ſee if he would remember me: 'this is a pleaſure in which I would 'indulge myſelf.'—'I underſtand 'thee,' ſaid I; 'thou wouldſt have 'me return to court, and try Fortune 'anew, or rather to grow ambitious 'and covetous again.'—'Why ſhould 'your morals be corrupted?' anſwered Scipio: 'have more confidence in 'your own virtue; I will anſwer for 'your conduct; the wholeſome re-'flections which you made upon the 'court during your diſgrace will ſcreen 'you from the perils of it: re-embark 'boldly upon a ſea, the ſhelves of 'which you are ſo well acquainted 'with.'—'Peace, flatterer!' ſaid I, interrupting him with a ſmile; 'art thou 'tired of ſeeing me lead a quiet life? 'I thought thou hadſt a greater re-'gard for my repoſe.'

In this part of our converſation, Don Cæſar and his ſon coming in, confirmed the news of the king's death, as well as the Duke of Lerma's misfortune; they moreover told me, that this miniſter having aſked leave to return to Rome, it was refuſed; and he was ordered to repair to his marquiſate at Denia: then, as if they had been in concert with my ſecretary, they adviſed

viſed me to go Madrid, and preſent myſelf to the new king, ſince I was known to him, and had even done him ſuch ſervice as the great always recompenſe with pleaſure. 'As for my 'part,' ſaid Don Alphonſo, 'I don't 'doubt but he will be grateful; and 'that Philip the Fourth will pay the 'debts of the Prince of Spain.'—'I 'am of the ſame opinion,' ſaid Don Cæſar; 'and look upon Santillane's 'journey to court as an occaſion for 'him to arrive at great preferment.'

'Truly, gentlemen,' cried I, 'you 'don't conſider what you ſay; to hear 'you, one would think I had nothing 'to do but repair to Madrid, in order 'to have the golden key, or ſome go-'vernment, conferred upon me: you 'are miſtaken; I am, on the contrary, 'perſuaded that the king would take 'no notice of my perſon, were I to 'preſent myſelf to his view: but I 'will do it, if you deſire, in order to 'diſabuſe you.' The noblemen of Leyva took me at my word, and I could not help promiſing that I would immediately ſet out for Madrid. As ſoon as my ſecretary ſaw me determined on the journey, he felt an immoderate joy: he imagined that I ſhould no ſooner appear before the new monarch than that prince would diſtinguiſh me in the crowd, and load me with honours and wealth: thereupon, feeding his fancy with the moſt ſplendid chimeras, he raiſed me to the firſt offices of the ſtate, and preferred himſelf by the help of my elevation.

I got ready, therefore, to return to court; not with a view of ſacrificing again to Fortune, but to ſatisfy Don Cæſar and his ſon, who imagined that I ſhould ſoon poſſeſs the favour of my ſovereign. True it is, I myſelf felt at bottom ſome deſire of trying if the young prince would know me again: attracted by this emotion of curioſity, without hope or deſign of reaping any advantage from the new reign, I departed with Scipio for Madrid, leaving the care of my houſe to Beatrice, who was an excellent œconomiſt.

CHAP. II.

GIL BLAS ARRIVES AT MADRID, AND APPEARS AT COURT; THE KING REMEMBERS AND RECOMMENDS HIM TO HIS PRIME-MINISTER. THE CONSEQUENCE OF THAT RECOMMENDATION.

WE gained Madrid in leſs than eight days, Don Alphonſo having accommodated us with two of his beſt horſes, that we might make the greater diſpatch; and we alighted at a furniſhed houſe where I lodged before, belonging to Vincent Forrero, my old landlord, who was very glad to ſee me again.

As this was a man who piqued himſelf upon knowing every thing that happened, both at court and city, I aſked if there was any thing new. 'A 'great many things,' anſwered he; 'ſince the death of Philip III. the 'friends and partizans of the Cardinal 'Duke of Lerma have beſtirred them-'ſelves to maintain his eminence in 'the miniſtry; but their efforts have 'been ineffectual: the Count d'Oli-'varez has got the better of them all. 'It is ſaid, that Spain loſes nothing 'by the change, and that the new 'prime-miniſter has a genius of ſuch 'vaſt extent, that he is able to govern 'the whole world: Heaven preſerve 'him! What is certain,' added he, 'is, that the people have conceived the 'higheſt opinion of his capacity; and 'we ſhall ſee, in the end, whether the 'Duke of Lerma's place is well or ill 'ſupplied.' Forrero having thus opened, gave me an account of all the changes which had been made at court ſince the Count d'Olivarez ſteered the helm of the monarchy.

Two days after my arrival at Madrid, I went to court in the afternoon, and put myſelf in the king's way, as he went into his cloſet: but he did not look at me. I returned next day to the ſame place, but was not more fortunate. The third time, he caſt his eye upon me as he paſſed, but ſeemed to take no notice of my perſon; whereupon I came to a determination, and ſaid to Scipio, who accompanied me, 'Thou ſeeſt that the king does not re-'member me; or, if he does, has no 'mind to renew the acquaintance: I 'believe it will not be amiſs for us to 'ſet out upon our return to Valencia.' —'Not ſo faſt, Sir,' replied my ſecretary; 'you know better than I, that 'ſucceſs at court is only to be obtain-'ed by patience: don't ceaſe ſhewing 'yourſelf to the prince; by dint of

'perſeverance in appearing before him 'you will oblige him to conſider you 'more attentively, and to recognize 'the features of his agent with the 'fair Catalina.'

That Scipio might have nothing to reproach me with, I had the complaiſance to continue the ſame conduct during three weeks; and one day, at length, the monarch, ſtruck with my appearance, ordered me to be called in; and I entered his cloſet, not without great diſorder to find myſelf *tête à tête* with my ſovereign. 'Who are 'you?' ſaid he; 'I remember your 'face, but cannot recollect where I 'have ſeen you.'—'Sir,' anſwered I, trembling, 'I had the honour to 'conduct your majeſty one night, 'with the Count de Lemos, to the 'houſe of ——' 'Oh! I remember 'it,' ſaid the prince, interrupting me, 'you was ſecretary to the Duke of 'Lerma, and, if I am not miſtaken, 'your name is Santillane. I have not 'forgot that you ſerved me with abundance of zeal on the occaſion, and 'that you was very ill rewarded for 'your pains: was not you impriſoned for that adventure?'—'Yes, Sir', ſaid I; 'I was ſix months in the 'tower of Segovia, from whence your 'goodneſs delivered me.'—'That,' anſwered he, 'does not acquit me of 'the obligation; it is not enough to 'ſet you at liberty, I ought to recompenſe you for the misfortune which 'you ſuffered for love of me.'

Juſt as the prince had pronounced theſe words, the Count d'Olivarez entered the cloſet. A favourite takes umbrage at every thing: he was aſtoniſhed to find a ſtranger there; and the king redoubled his ſurprize, in ſaying to him, 'Count, I recommend this 'young man to you; employ him in 'ſome ſhape or other, and take care 'of his advancement.' The miniſter affected to receive this order with a gracious look, eyeing me from head to foot, and very anxious to know who I was. 'Go, friend,' ſaid the monarch to me, making a ſign for me to retire; 'the 'count will not fail to employ you in 'an advantageous manner, both for 'my ſervice and your own intereſt.'

I immediately quitted the cloſet, and rejoined the ſon of Coſcolina, who, extremely impatient to know what the king had ſaid to me, remained in the utmoſt agitation. He aſked me forthwith, whether we muſt return to Valencia or ſtay at court. 'Thou ſhalt 'judge,' ſaid I: then I overwhelmed him with joy, in recounting to him, word for word, the ſhort converſation which I had with the king. 'My dear 'maſter,' ſaid Scipio to me, when he heard it, 'will you diſtruſt my almanacks again? Confeſs that the Lords 'of Leyva and I were not to blame, 'in exhorting you to take a trip to 'Madrid. I already ſee you in ſome 'eminent poſt; you will become the 'Calderona of Count d'Olivarez.'—'That is not at all what I wiſh,' ſaid I, interrupting him; 'I have no ambition for a place which is environed 'with ſo many precipices. I would 'rather have an employment in which 'I ſhould have no occaſion to do injuſtice, or carry on a ſhameful traffick of my prince's favour: after the 'uſe I made of my paſt credit, I cannot be too much upon my guard 'againſt avarice and ambition.'—— 'Come, Sir,' replied my ſecretary, 'the miniſter will give you ſome good 'poſt, which you may fill without 'ceaſing to be an honeſt man.'

More urged by Scipio than by my own curioſity, I went next day to the houſe of Count d'Olivarez before ſunriſe; having been informed, that every morning, in ſummer and winter, he gave audience by candle-light. I modeſtly took my ſtation in the corner of the hall, from whence I narrowly obſerved the count when he appeared; for I had but a ſuperficial view of him in the king's cloſet: he was taller than the middle-ſize, and might have paſſed for a fat man in a country where we ſee none almoſt but lean people; his ſhoulders were ſo high, that I thought him hunch-backed, though he was not ſo; his head, which was extremely large, hung down upon his breaſt; his hair was black and ſtraight, his viſage long, his complexion of an olive colour, his mouth ſunk in, and his chin peaked and turned upwards at the end *.

All this together could not make a

* It was likely, on account of his diſadvantageous figure, that he generally gave audience from his couch, or received people ſitting.

very

very handſome appearance; nevertheleſs, as I believed him to be well diſpoſed towards me, I looked upon him with a favourable eye, and even found him agreeable. True it is, he treated every body with an affable and pleaſant air, and very graciouſly received the memorials which were preſented to him; and this ſeemed to ſupply the place of a good perſon. Meanwhile, when I advanced in my turn to ſalute him, and make myſelf known, he darted a rude and threatening look at me; then turning his back, without deigning to hear me, returned into his cloſet. I now thought him more ugly than he was naturally, went out of the hall very much confounded at ſuch an unfavourable reception, and did not know what to think of the matter.

Having rejoined Scipio, who waited for me at the door, 'Doſt thou know,' ſaid I, 'what reception I have met 'with?'—'No,' anſwered he; 'but 'it is not difficult to gueſs: the mi-'niſter, ready to conform himſelf to 'the pleaſure of his prince, has doubt-'leſs offered you ſome conſiderable 'employment.'—'There you are miſ-'taken,' I replied; telling him at the ſame time in what manner I had been received. Having liſtened attentively, he ſaid, 'The count muſt have forgot 'you, or miſtaken you for ſomebody 'elſe; I adviſe you to wait on him 'again, and I am ſure he will treat 'you with another ſort of look.' I followed my ſecretary's advice, and preſented myſelf the ſecond time before the miniſter, who treated me ſtill worſe than at firſt, frowned at me as if the ſight of me had given him pain, turned his eyes another way, and retired without ſpeaking one word.

I was touched to the quick by his behaviour, and tempted to depart immediately for Valencia: but this Scipio did not fail to oppoſe, being unwilling to renounce the hopes which he had conceived. 'Doſt thou not ſee,' ſaid I to him, 'that the count wants to re-'move me from court? The king has 'expreſſed to him ſome regard for me, 'and that is ſufficient to bring upon 'me the averſion of his favourite: let 'us yield, my child, let us yield with 'a good grace to the power of ſuch a 'formidable foe.'—'Sir,' anſwered he, incenſed againſt the Count d'Olivarez, 'I would not ſo eaſily quit my ground; 'I would go and complain to his ma-'jeſty of the little regard which the 'miniſter ſhews to his recommenda-'tion.'—'Bad counſel, my friend!' ſaid I: 'if I ſhould take that impru-'dent ſtep, I would ſoon repent it; 'nay, I believe, I run ſome riſque in 'tarrying in this city.'

My ſecretary began to weigh theſe words; and conſidering that he had actually to do with a man who might make us reviſit the tower of Segovia, he partook of my fear, and no longer oppoſed my deſire of quitting Madrid, from whence I reſolved to move the very next day.

CHAP. III.

GIL BLAS IS HINDERED FROM EXECUTING HIS RESOLUTION TO LEAVE THE COURT, AND RECEIVES AN IMPORTANT PIECE OF SERVICE FROM JOSEPH NAVARRO.

ON my return to my lodging I met my old friend Joſeph Navarro, clerk of the kitchen to Don Balthazar de Zuniga. I went up to him, ſaluted him, and aſked if he knew me, and if he would ſtill be ſo good as to ſpeak to a wretch who had repaid his friendſhip with ingratitude. 'You confeſs, 'then,' ſaid he, 'that you have not 'uſed me extremely well?'—'Yes,' anſwered I; 'and you have a right to 'load me with reproaches: I deſerve 'them all, if I have not already ex-'piated my crime by the remorſe which 'attended it.'—'Since you have re-'pented of your fault,' replied Navarro, embracing me, 'I ought no longer 'to remember it.' I, on my part, hugged Joſeph in my arms; and we reſumed our former ſentiments for each other.

He had heard of my impriſonment, and the diſorder of my affairs, but was ignorant of what followed. I informed him of all, and even recounted to him the converſation I had with the king, not concealing the bad reception I had met with from the miniſter, no more than my deſign of retiring again to my ſolitude. 'Beware of going 'thither,' ſaid he: 'ſince our monarch 'has expreſſed a friendſhip for you, 'it muſt certainly be of ſome ſervice.

'Between

'Between you and me, the Count 'd'Olivarez has a very ſingular diſpo-'ſition, and is full of whims: he 'ſometimes, as on this occaſion, acts 'in a very unaccountable manner; 'and nobody but himſelf has the key 'of his irregular behaviour. In ſhort, 'whatever reaſons he may have for re-'ceiving you in this manner, ſtick 'cloſe to the buſineſs; he will not hin-'der you from profiting by the prince's 'bounty; this is what I aſſure you: 'I will mention it this evening to Sig-'nior Don Balthazar de Zuniga, my 'maſter, who is uncle to the Count 'd'Olivarez, and ſhares with him the 'cares of government.' Navarro having told me this, aſked a direction to my lodging; and ſo we parted.

It was not long before I ſaw him again. Coming to me next day, 'Sig-'nior de Santillane,' ſaid he, 'you 'have a protector in my maſter, who 'will favour you with his ſupport. 'On account of the good character 'which I gave of you, he has promiſ-'ed to ſpeak in your behalf to his ne-'phew the Count d'Olivarez, whom I 'hope he will prepoſſeſs in your fa-'vour.' My friend Navarro, who did not ſerve me by halves, introduced me two days after to Don Balthazar, who ſaid to me, with a courteous look, 'Signior de Santillane, your friend 'Joſeph has ſpoke ſo well of you as 'to engage me in your intereſts.' I made a profound bow to Signior de Zuniga; and anſwered, that I ſhould all my life have a lively ſenſe of the obligation I lay under to Navarro, for having procured for me the protec-tion of a miniſter who was juſtly ſtyled, *the light of the council*. Don Balthazar, at this flattering reply, clapped me on the ſhoulder, ſaying, with a ſmile, 'You may go again to-morrow 'to the levee of the Count d'Olivarez, 'with whom you will be better ſatis-'fied than before.'

I appeared therefore the third time before the prime-miniſter; who, having diſtinguiſhed me in the crowd, honoured me with a ſmiling look, from whence I conceived a good omen. 'This goes well,' ſaid I to myſelf: 'the uncle has made the nephew hear 'reaſon.' I now expected a favour-able reception, and my expectation was fulfilled: the count, after having given audience to every body, ſent for me to his cloſet, where he ſaid to me, with a familiar air, 'Friend Santil-'lane, forgive me for having thrown 'thee into perplexity for my diverſion; 'I pleaſed myſelf with giving thee 'uneaſineſs, in order to try thy pru-'dence, and ſee what thou wouldſt 'do in thy chagrin. I don't doubt that 'thou thought'ſt I was diſpleaſed with 'thee; but, on the contrary, my child, 'I own I have a liking to thy perſon. 'Though the king my maſter had 'not ordered me to take care of thy 'fortune, I ſhould have done it through 'pure inclination. Beſides, my uncle, 'Don Balthazar de Zuniga, to whom 'I can refuſe nothing, has deſired me 'to look upon thee as one for whom 'he intereſts himſelf: this is enough 'to determine me in thy favour.' This declaration made ſuch a ſtrong im-preſſion upon my ſenſes, that they were quite diſordered. I threw myſelf at the feet of the miniſter; who, having bid me riſe, went on in this manner: 'Come hither again this afternoon, 'and call for my ſteward, who will 'impart to thee the orders I ſhall give 'him.' So ſaying, his excellency went out to hear maſs, as he uſually did every day, after having given audience; and then repaired to the king's levee.

CHAP. IV.

GIL BLAS ACQUIRES THE LOVE OF THE COUNT D'OLIVAREZ.

I Did not fail to return in the after-noon, and call for the ſteward, whoſe name was Don Raymond Caporis. I no ſooner told him my name, than ſaluting me with great demon-ſtrations of reſpect, 'Signior,' ſaid he, 'follow me, if you pleaſe: I will 'conduct you to the apartment which 'is deſtined for you in this houſe.' So ſaying, he carried me by a little ſtair to a range of five or ſix rooms, which compoſed the ſecond ſtory of one wing of the houſe, and which were very plainly furniſhed. 'This,' ſaid he, 'is the lodging which his grace 'appoints for you; and here you will 'have a table with ſix covers, main-'tained at his expence. You will be 'ſerved by his own domeſticks, and 'there will always be a coach at your 'command. This is not all,' added he;

he; 'his excellency has ordered me to 'treat you with the ſame reſpect as if 'you was of the family of Guzman.' —'What the deuce is the meaning of 'all this!' ſaid I to myſelf. 'How 'am I to underſtand theſe diſtinctions? 'Is there not ſome miſchief at bot-'tom? and is it not for his diverſion 'that the miniſter gives me ſuch ho-'nourable treatment?' While I was in this uncertainty, fluctuating between hope and fear, a page came and told me, that the count wanted me. I went inſtantly to his grace, who being alone in his cloſet, 'Well, Santillane,' ſaid he; 'art thou ſatisfied with thy apart-'ment, and the orders which I have 'given to Don Raymond?'—'The 'goodneſs of your excelleney,' an-ſwered I, 'ſeems to be exceſſive; and 'I receive it with fear and trembling.' —'For what reaſon?' ſaid he. 'Can 'I do too much honour to a man whom 'the king has recommended to my 'care? No, indeed; I do no more than 'my duty in treating thee in an ho-'nourable manner: be not therefore 'ſurprized at what I do for thee; and 'be aſſured, that a ſolid and ſplendid 'fortune cannot eſcape thee, provided 'thou art as much attached to me, 'as thou waſt to the Duke of Lerma. 'But, with regard to that nobleman,' added he, 'I have been told that you 'lived in great familiarity with him. 'I am curious to know how you two 'became acquainted, and what em-'ployment you exerciſed under that 'miniſter: diſguiſe nothing; I inſiſt 'upon hearing the whole truth.' I then remembered my perplexity with the Duke of Lerma in the ſame caſe, and in what manner I extricated my-ſelf; and this I practiſed again very ſucceſsfully: that is to ſay, in my nar-ration I ſoftened the rough places, and paſſed ſlightly over thoſe things which did not much redound to my honour: I likewiſe ſpared the Duke of Lerma; though in doing otherwiſe I ſhould have better pleaſed my hearer. As for Don Rodrigo de Calderona *, I gave him no quarter, but diſcloſed all the fine ſtrokes which I knew he ſtruck in the traffick of commanderies, govern-ments, and benefices.

'What you tell me of Calderona,' ſaid the miniſter, interrupting me, 'is 'conformable to ſeveral memorials 'which have been preſented againſt 'him, and which contain heads of 'accuſation ſtill more important. His 'trial will ſoon come on; and if you 'wiſh his downfal, I believe your de-'ſire will be ſatisfied.'—'I don't de-'ſire his death,' ſaid I; 'though it 'was not his fault that I found not 'mine in the tower of Segovia, where 'he was the cauſe of my being im-'priſoned for a good many months.' —'How!' cried his excellency; 'was 'Don Rodrigo the cauſe of thy im-'priſonment? this is what I did not 'know. Don Balthazar, to whom Na-'varro recounted thy hiſtory, told me 'that the late king ordered thee to be 'confined, as a puniſhment for hav-'ing carried the prince of Spain to a 'ſuſpected place in the night; but I 'knew no more of the matter; and I 'can't conceive what part Calderona 'could play in the piece.'—'The part 'of a lover who revenges an injury 'received,' anſwered I. I then told him the whole adventure; which he thought ſo diverting, that, grave as he was, he could not help laughing, or rather weeping with mirth. He was infinitely rejoiced with Catalina, ſome-times niece, and ſometimes grand-daughter, as well as with the part which the Duke of Lerma acted in the whole.

When I had finiſhed my narration, the count diſmiſſed me, ſaying, that he would not fail in finding me ſome employment next day. I ran imme-diately to the houſe of Zuniga, to

* Rodrigo Calderona, was firſt made gentleman of the bed-chamber to the king; then ſecretary of ſtate; ſome time after, he received the collar of the order of St. Jago, was made Commander of Arcana, and created Captain of the German Guard. Such extra-ordinary favours he could not ſupport with moderation; but, becoming extremely in-ſolent and licentious, deſpiſed the moſt powerful Grandees of Spain, to whoſe reſent-ment he fell a ſacrifice. He was tried 1619, on an impeachment containing two hun-dred and fifty articles, among which were, ſorcery, and poiſoning the queen; and though theſe two were not proved, yet he was condemned to loſe his head; which was ſevered by a ſtroke upon the throat; none but traitors in Spain receiving it on the neck behind. He died with ſuch courage and decency as affected even his enemies with ſorrow and remorſe.

thank

thank Don Balthazar for his good offices, and to tell my friend Joſeph how well I was with the prime-miniſter.

CHAP. V.

THE PRIVATE CONVERSATION WHICH GIL BLAS HAD WITH NAVARRO, AND THE FIRST BUSINESS IN WHICH HE WAS EMPLOYED BY THE COUNT D'OLIVAREZ.

AS ſoon as I ſaw Joſeph, I told him, with ſome agitation, that I had a great many things to communicate; upon which he carried me to a private place, where, after having informed him of what had happened, I aſked his opinion of the matter. 'My 'opinion,' anſwered he, 'is, that you 'are in the way of making a vaſt fortune: every thing ſmiles upon you; 'you are agreeable to the prime-miniſter; and another thing which may 'turn out to your advantage is, that 'I can do you the ſame ſervice which 'you received from my uncle Melchior de la Ronda, when you firſt 'entered the family of the Archbiſhop of Grenada. He ſpared you 'the trouble of ſtudying the prelate 'and his principal officers, by diſcloſing their different characters to you 'at once: and I will, after his example, make you acquainted with the 'count, the counteſs his wife, and 'Donna Maria de Guzman, their only 'child.

'The miniſter has a quick penetrating genius, capable of forming 'grand deſigns. He ſets up for an 'univerſal man, becauſe he has a ſmall 'tincture of every ſcience, and believes himſelf able to decide in every 'thing. He imagines himſelf a profound lawyer, a great captain, and 'a moſt conſummate politician. Add 'to this, he is ſo intoxicated with his 'own opinions, that he always follows them rather than thoſe of others, that he may not ſeem beholden to the underſtanding of any man. 'Between you and me, this defect 'may have ſtrange conſequences; from 'which Heaven preſerve the monarchy! He ſhines in the council by a 'natural eloquence; and he would 'write as well as he ſpeaks, if, in 'order to dignify his ſtyle, he did not 'affect expreſſions which render it ſtiff 'and obſcure. He is, beſides, very 'whimſical, capricious, and chimerical: ſo much for his head. As to 'his heart, he is generous and friendly. He is ſaid to be vindictive; but 'what Spaniard is otherwiſe? He is 'alſo accuſed of ingratitude, in being 'the occaſion of exiling the Duke 'd'Uzeda, and the Friar Lewis Aliaga, to whom, people ſay, he had 'great obligations: but this is pardonable; the deſire of being prime-miniſter prevails over every other 'ſentiment.

'Donna Agnez de Zuniga à Velaſco, Counteſs of Olivarez,' continued Joſeph, 'is a lady who has no 'fault that I know, but that of ſelling her favours at a high price. As 'for Donna Maria de Guzman, who 'is, without contradiction, this day 'the richeſt match in Spain, ſhe is an 'accompliſhed young lady, and the 'idol of her father. Model your behaviour accordingly; be aſſiduous 'in making your court to theſe two 'ladies; and appear ſtill more devoted 'to the Count d'Olivarez than you 'was to the Duke of Lerma, before 'your journey to Segovia; in which 'caſe, you will certainly become a 'perſonage of rank and power.

'I likewiſe adviſe you,' added he, 'to wait upon my maſter Don Balthazar from time to time; though you 'have no need of him for your advancement, don't neglect him; he 'has a very good opinion of you at 'preſent: preſerve his friendſhip and 'eſteem, which may be of ſervice to 'you upon ſome occaſion or other.'— 'As the uncle and nephew,' ſaid I, 'are both concerned in the miniſtry, 'is there no jealouſy between the two 'colleagues?'—'On the contrary,' anſwered he, 'they live together in the 'greateſt harmony. Had it not been 'for Don Balthazar, the Count d'Olivarez, perhaps, would not have 'been prime-miniſter: for, in ſhort, 'after the death of Philip the Third, 'all the friends and partizans of the 'houſe of Sandoval exerted themſelves 'very much, ſome in favour of the 'cardinal, and others in behalf of his 'ſon; but my maſter, who was the 'moſt ſubtle among the courtiers, 'and the count, as cunning as he,

'broke

'broke all their meaſures, and took 'ſuch effectual ſteps to ſecure that 'place, that their antagoniſts were 'quite foiled. The Count d'Olivarez, 'when he became miniſter, ſhared the 'adminiſtration with his uncle Don 'Balthazar, to whom he left the care 'of foreign affairs, reſerving all do-'meſtick concerns to himſelf: ſo that, 'by theſe means, ſtrengthening the 'ties of friendſhip, which ought na-'turally to unite perſons of the ſame 'blood, theſe two noblemen, indepen-'dent of one another, live in ſuch good 'correſpondence as to me ſeems un-'alterable.'

Such was the converſation I had with Joſeph, by whoſe information I hoped to profit: after which I went to thank Signior de Zuniga for his goodneſs towards me. He told me very politely, that he would ſeize every occaſion of befriending me, and that he was very glad to find me ſatisfied with his nephew, to whom, he aſſured me, he would ſpeak again in my favour; reſolving at leaſt, he ſaid, to convince me, that he had my welfare at heart, and that, inſtead of one patron, I had two. It was thus that Don Balthazar, out of friendſhip for Navarro, intereſted himſelf in my behalf.

That very evening I quitted my hired room, to go and lodge at the prime-miniſter's houſe, where I ſupped with Scipio in my own apartment. There we were ſerved by the domeſticks of the family, who, while we eat our victuals with an affected gravity, laughed, perhaps, within themſelves, at the reſpect which they were commanded to ſhew. When the table was uncovered, and they were retired, my ſecretary, laying aſide his conſtraint, ſaid a thouſand diverting things, which his gay diſpoſition and ſanguine hopes inſpired. As for me, although overjoyed at the brilliant ſituation in which I ſaw myſelf, I felt myſelf no longer diſpoſed to be dazzled by it; but, going to bed, ſlept ſoundly, without giving way to the agreeable ideas with which I might have entertained my fancy; whereas the ambitious Scipio enjoyed little repoſe, but paſſed half of the night in hoarding up money for the portion of his daughter Seraphina.

I had ſcarce got on my cloaths next morning, when I was ſent for by his grace; who, when I came before him ſaid to me, 'Well, Santillane; let us 'ſee a ſpecimen of what thou canſt do. 'Thou ſayeſt the Duke of Lerma em-'ployed thee in abridging memorials: 'I have got one, which I intend for 'thy firſt eſſay. The ſubject of it is 'this: it muſt be a performance to 'prepoſſeſs the publick in favour of 'my miniſtry. I have already pri-'vately ſpread a report, that I found 'affairs in very great diſorder: the 'buſineſs therefore is to expoſe to the 'eyes of both court and city the mi-'ſerable condition to which the mo-'narchy is reduced. We muſt, on 'this ſubject, draw a picture which 'will ſtrike the people, and hinder 'them from regretting the loſs of my 'predeceſſor. After that, you muſt 'extol the meaſures which I have 'taken to render his majeſty's reign 'glorious, his dominions flouriſhing, 'and his ſubjects perfectly happy.'

His grace, having ſpoke in this manner, gave me a paper, containing the juſt cauſes the nation had to complain of the preceding adminiſtration, ſummed up in ten articles; the leaſt of which, I remember, was ſufficient to alarm all good Spaniards: then ſhutting me in a cloſet adjoining to his own, he left me to work at liberty. I began to compoſe my memorial as well as I could. I firſt of all deſcribed the bad condition of the kingdom, the finances exhauſted, the royal revenue engroſſed by partizans, and the marine entirely ruined. I then demonſtrated the faults committed by thoſe who had governed the ſtate under the laſt reign, and the terrible conſequences which might proceed from theſe faults. In ſhort, I repreſented the monarchy in danger, and ſo ſharply cenſured the former miniſter, that, according to my memorial, the loſs of the Duke of Lerma was a great happineſs for Spain. To ſay the truth, though I harboured no reſentment againſt that nobleman, I was not ſorry to do him this good office. Such is the diſpoſition of man!

In fine, after a frightful picture of the misfortunes which threatened Spain, I encouraged the minds of the people, by making them conceive fair hopes of the future. I made the Count d'Olivarez ſpeak like a ſaviour ſent from heaven for the ſalvation of the ſtate; I promiſed mountains and miracles;

in a word, I entered ſo well into the views of the new miniſter, that he ſeemed ſurprized at my performance; which when he had read to an end, 'Santillane,' ſaid he, 'doſt thou know 'that thou haſt compoſed a morſel 'worthy of a ſecretary of ſtate? I am 'not ſurprized that the Duke of Lerma 'employed thy pen; thy ſtyle is con-'ciſe, and even elegant; but I think 'it is a little too natural.' He then pointed out the places which were not to his taſte, altering them with his own hand; and I perceived, by his corrections, that he loved (as Navarro had told me) obſcure and far-fetched expreſſions. Nevertheleſs, though he was reſolved to have nobleneſs, or rather conceits, in his diction, he preſerved two-thirds of my work; and, to ſhew how well he was ſatisfied with my capacity, ſent to me, by Don Raymond, three hundred piſtoles, as a deſert at dinner.

CHAP. VI.

THE USE TO WHICH GIL BLAS PUTS HIS THREE HUNDRED PISTOLES; AND HIS CHARGE TO SCIPIO: WITH THE SUCCESS OF THE ABOVE-MENTIONED MEMORIAL.

THIS favour of the miniſter furniſhed Scipio with a new opportunity of congratulating my return to court. 'You ſee,' ſaid he, 'that 'Fortune has great deſigns in your 'favour. Are you now ſorry for 'having quitted your ſolitude? Long 'life to the Count d'Olivarez! he is 'quite another ſort of a patron than his 'predeceſſor. The Duke of Lerma, 'though you was ſo much attached to 'him, allowed you to languiſh ſeveral 'months, without giving you one pi-'ſtole; whereas the count has already 'beſtowed upon you a gratification 'which you could not have expected 'till after long ſervice.

'I wiſh,' added he, 'that the Lords 'of Leyva were witneſſes of the hap-'pineſs which you enjoy, or at leaſt 'made acquainted with it.'—'It is 'time, indeed, for them to know it,' anſwered I; 'and I was juſt going to 'talk to thee about the matter. I don't 'doubt that they are extremely impa-'tient to hear from me; but I waited 'until I ſhould ſee myſelf ſettled in 'ſome ſhape or other, and be able to 'inform them poſitively whether or 'not I ſhould ſtay at court. Now that 'I am fixed, thou mayeſt ſet out for 'Valencia when thou wilt, to inform 'thoſe noblemen of my preſent ſitua-'tion, which I look upon as their own 'work, ſince it is certain, that, had it 'not been for them, I ſhould never have 'determined upon my journey to Ma-'drid.'—'My dear maſter,' cried the ſon of Coſcolina, 'how happy will 'they be when I recount to them what 'has happened to you! would I were 'already at the gates of Valencia! but 'I ſhall be there very ſoon. Don Al-'phonſo's two horſes are ready: I will 'ſet out immediately with one of his 'grace's lacquies; for, beſides that I 'ſhall be glad of a companion on the 'road, you know people will be daz-'zled by the livery of the prime-'miniſter.'

I could not help laughing at the ridiculous vanity of my ſecretary, though, vainer ſtill perhaps than he, I let him do as he deſired. 'Go,' ſaid I; 'and return 'as ſoon as poſſible; for I have ano-'ther commiſſion to give thee: thou 'muſt go to the Aſturias with money 'for my mother. I have, through 'negligence, let the time paſs, on 'which I promiſed to remit an hun-'dred piſtoles to her, and which you 'undertook to deliver with thy own 'hand. Theſe ſort of promiſes from 'a ſon ought to be ſo ſacred that I 'upbraid myſelf with my want of 'punctuality.'—'Sir,' anſwered Scipio, 'in ſix weeks I will bring you an 'account of both theſe commiſſions; 'I will converſe with the Lords of 'Leyva, make a tour to your country-'houſe, and reviſit the city of Oviedo, 'which I never remember without 'wiſhing three-fourths and a half of 'it's inhabitants at the devil.' Upon this, I counted out to the ſon of Coſcolina one hundred piſtoles for my mother's penſion, with an hundred more for himſelf, that he might agreeably perform the long journey which he had undertaken.

A few days after his departure, the count ſent our memorial to the preſs; and it was no ſooner publiſhed than it became the ſubject of all converſation in Madrid. The people, always friends

to

to novelty, were charmed with the performance. The low ebb of the finances, which was painted in lively colours, incenſed them againſt the Duke of Lerma; and if the ſtrokes of the quill, which that miniſter received, were not applauded by every body, at leaſt they met with abundance of approbation.

As for the magnificent promiſes made by the Count d'Olivarez, and, among others, that of defraying the national expence by a prudent œconomy, without incommoding the ſubjects, they dazzled the citizens in general, and confirmed them in the grand opinion which they had already entertained of his capacity; ſo that the whole city echoed with his praiſe.

That miniſter, overjoyed to ſee the accompliſhment of his aim, which in that publication had been to acquire the publick affection, was reſolved to deſerve it effectually, by a commendable action, which ſhould be ſerviceable to the king. For this purpoſe he had recourſe to the invention of the Emperor Galba; that is, to make thoſe who had enriched themſelves, the Lord knows how, in the adminiſtration of the finances, regorge their wealth. When he had drawn from thoſe leeches the blood which they had ſucked, and filled the coffers of the king, he undertook to preſerve it, by ſuppreſſing all penſions, not even excepting his own, as well as the gratifications that were given out of the king's exchequer. To ſucceed in this deſign, which he could not execute without changing the face of government, he employed me in compoſing a new memorial, the ſubſtance and form of which he dictated. He then enjoined me to riſe as much as I could above the ordinary ſimplicity of my ſtyle, and give more dignity to my expreſſions. 'Enough, my lord,' ſaid I; 'your excellency ſhall have the '*ſplendid* and *ſublime* which you de'ſire.' I ſhut myſelf up in the ſame cloſet where I had compoſed the firſt, and there went to work, after having invoked the eloquent genius of the Archbiſhop of Grenada.

I began by repreſenting, that we could not be too careful in preſerving the money which was in the treaſury, and which ought to be employed only in the emergencies of the ſtate, as being a ſacred fund, reſerved on purpoſe to keep the enemies of Spain in awe. Then I demonſtrated to the king (for the memorial was addreſſed to him) that, in taking away all the penſions and gratifications with which the revenue was ſaddled, he could not, for all that, deprive himſelf of the pleaſure of rewarding thoſe ſubjects who ſhould deſerve his favour; ſince, without touching his treaſure, he was in a condition to beſtow upon them great recompences: that for ſome he had vice-royalties, governments, orders of knighthood, and military employments; for others, commanderies, and penſions upon them, titles, magiſtracies; and, in fine, all ſorts of benefices for thoſe who are conſecrated to the church.

This memorial, which was much longer than the firſt, took me up near three days; and luckily I compoſed it to the taſte of my maſter; who, finding it written with emphaſis, and ſtuffed with metaphors, loaded me with applauſe. 'I am very well ſatisfied 'with this,' ſaid he, pointing to the moſt tumid places; 'theſe are well 'ſtamped expreſſions. Courage, friend; 'I forſee that thou wilt be of great 'ſervice to me.' Nevertheleſs, in ſpite of the applauſe of which he was ſo prodigal, he did not fail to retouch the memorial. He inſerted a good deal of his own, and compoſed a piece of eloquence which charmed the king and the whole court. The city joined it's approbation, and conceived a happy omen of the future; and flattered itſelf, that the monarchy would reſume it's ancient luſtre under the miniſtry of ſuch a great man.

His excellency, ſeeing that this piece did him a great deal of honour, was willing that I ſhould reap ſome fruit from it, in conſideration of my ſhare in the compoſition: he accordingly beſtowed upon me a penſion of five hundred crowns upon the commandery of Caſtile; which was the more agreeable to me, as it was not wickedly though eaſily got.

CHAP. VII.

BY WHAT ACCIDENT, IN WHAT PLACE, AND CONDITION, GIL BLAS FOUND HIS FRIEND FA-

BRICIO; AND THE CONVERSATION THAT PASSED BETWEEN THEM.

NOTHING gave more pleaſure to the count, than to know the opinion which the people of Madrid had of his conduct in the miniſtry. He aſked me every day, what people ſaid of him; and even maintained ſpies, who brought him an exact account of what paſſed in the city. They reported to him every word which they heard; and, as he ordered them to be ſincere, his ſelf-love ſuffered ſometimes; for the people have an intemperance of tongue which has no reſpect of perſons.

When I perceived that he was pleaſed with theſe reports, I employed myſelf every afternoon in going to publick places, and joining converſation with good company. When they ſpoke of the government, I liſtened with attention; and if they ſaid any thing that deſerved to be retold to his excellency, I did not fail to inform him of it: but it muſt be obſerved, that I never reported any thing which was ſpoke to his prejudice.

One day, as I returned from one of thoſe places, paſſing by the door of an hoſpital, I felt an inclination to enter. I walked through two or three wards full of ſick people a-bed, and ſurveyed every thing around me. Among theſe unfortunate people, whom I could not behold without compaſſion, I was ſtruck with the appearance of one, who, I believed, was my old friend and comrade Fabricio. That I might have a more diſtinct view of him, I approached his bed; and, having no longer any reaſon to doubt that it was the poet Nunnez, ſtopped a few minutes to conſider him, without ſpeaking; while he, recollecting me alſo, eyed me in the ſame manner. At length, breaking ſilence, 'Sure,' ſaid I, 'my 'eyes deceive me! is this actually Fa- 'bricio whom I meet in this place!' —'The very ſame,' anſwered he coldly: 'and thou haſt no cauſe to be 'ſurprized at it. Since I left thee, I 'have ever exerciſed the buſineſs of an 'author: I have compoſed romances, 'comedies, all kinds of works of ge- 'nius; I have run my race, and am 'now at the hoſpital.'

I could not help laughing at theſe words, and ſtill more at the ſerious air with which they were pronounced. 'How!' cried I; 'has the Muſe 'brought thee to this place? hath ſhe 'played thee this villainous trick?'— 'Thou ſeeſt it is ſo,' he replied: 'this 'houſe is the retreat of many a wit. 'Thou haſt done well, my child, to 'take another road; but methinks 'thou art no longer at court, and the 'face of thy affairs is changed: nay, 'I remember to have heard, that thou 'waſt impriſoned by order of the king.' —'True,' ſaid I, 'the charming ſi- 'tuation in which I was, when we 'parted, in a little time after was fol- 'lowed by a reverſe of fortune, which 'robbed me of my wealth and liberty: 'nevertheleſs, my friend, thou ſeeſt 'me again in a more flouriſhing ſtate 'than ever.'—'That is impoſſible!' cried Nunnez; 'thy apparel is frugal 'and plain; and thou haſt not that 'vain and inſolent air which proſpe- 'rity uſually gives.'—'Misfortune,' anſwered I, 'hath purified my virtue; 'and I have learned, in the ſchool of 'adverſity, to enjoy riches with mo- 'deration.'

'Tell me then,' cried Fabricio, ſtarting up in a tranſport, 'what may 'be thy employment? what buſineſs 'doſt thou follow? art thou not 'ſteward to ſome ruined grandee, or 'opulent widow?'—'I have a better 'poſt,' I replied; 'but thou muſt diſ- 'penſe with my telling thee more at 'preſent: I will ſatisfy thy curioſity 'another time. I will now only let 'thee know, that I am in a condition 'to aſſiſt thee, or rather, to make thee 'eaſy for life, provided thou wilt pro- 'miſe to write no more works of ge- 'nius either in verſe or proſe. Doſt 'thou feel thyſelf capable of making 'ſuch a ſacrifice to me?'—'I have 'already made it to Heaven,' ſaid he, 'during a ſevere diſtemper of 'which I am juſt cured. A Domini- 'can father has made me abjure 'poetry, as an amuſement which, if 'not criminal, at leaſt diverts the mind 'from the purſuit of wiſdom and vir- 'tue.'

'I congratulate thee, my dear 'Nunnez,' anſwered I; 'but beware of 'a relapſe.'—'That I am in no fear 'of,' he reſumed: 'I am firmly re- 'ſolved to abandon the Muſes; and, 'when thou cameſt into the ward, 'was

'was juſt compoſing an eternal adieu 'to them in verſe.'—'Mr. Fabricio,' ſaid I, ſhaking my head, 'I don't 'know if the Dominican and I dare 'truſt to your abjuration, you ſeem 'ſo furiouſly enchanted by theſe learn-'ed damſels!'—'No, no!' anſwered he; 'I have broke off all connection 'with them; nay, more, I have con-'ceived an averſion for the publick, 'who does not deſerve that authors 'ſhould conſecrate their works to it: 'I ſhould be ſorry if I could produce 'any thing that would pleaſe it. Don't 'imagine,' continued he, 'that this 'language is dictated by paſſion: I 'ſpeak in cold blood. I equally de-'ſpiſe the applauſe and hiſſes of the 'publick, which one does not know 'how to manage. It is ſo capricious, 'that it does not think two days one 'way. What fools are thoſe drama-'tick writers who are vain of the ſuc-'ceſs of their performances! What-'ever noiſe they make by their no-'velty, if they are brought upon the 'ſtage twenty years after, they are for 'the moſt part very ill received. The 'preſent generation taxes the paſt 'with want of taſte, and it's determi-'nations are contradicted by thoſe of 'the next; from whence I concluded, 'that thoſe authors who are now ap-'plauded, will be hiſſed by poſterity. 'It is the ſame thing with regard to 'romances, and other amuſing books, 'which, though at firſt they meet with 'general approbation, inſenſibly ſink 'into contempt. That honour, there-'fore, which we reap from the good 'ſucceſs of our works, is nothing but 'a mere chimera, an illuſion of the 'brain, a fire of ſtraw which evapo-'rates in ſmoke.'

Though I was well convinced that the Aſturian poet ſpoke this from paſſion only, I did not ſeem to perceive it; but ſaid to him, 'I am overjoyed to 'find thee diſguſted with the belles 'lettres, and radically cured of the 'rage of writing. Be aſſured that I 'will immediately procure for thee an 'employment in which thou mayeſt 'enrich thyſelf, without being at a 'great expence of genius.'—'So much 'the better!' cried he. 'Genius ſtinks 'in my noſtrils, and I now look upon 'it as the moſt fatal preſent that Hea-'ven can beſtow upon man.'—'I wiſh, 'my dear Fabricio,' I replied, 'that 'thou mayeſt ſtill preſerve theſe ſenti-'ments. If you perſiſt in your reſo-'lution to quit poetry, I repeat it, I 'will ſoon procure for thee an honour-'able and lucrative poſt; but until I 'can do thee this ſervice,' added I, giving him a purſe of ſixty piſtoles, 'pray accept of this ſmall token of 'my friendſhip.'

'O generous friend!' cried the ſon of Barber Nunnez, tranſported with gratitude and joy; 'what thanks do 'I owe to Heaven for bringing thee 'into this hoſpital, which I will leave 'this very day by thy aſſiſtance!' And he actually ordered himſelf to be tranſ-ported into a hired lodging: but, be-fore we parted, I told him where I lived, and invited him to come and ſee me, as ſoon as he ſhould be perfectly recovered. He ſeemed extremely ſur-prized, when I told him, that I lodged in the houſe of the Count d'Olivarez. 'Thrice happy Gil Blas,' ſaid he, 'whoſe fate it is to be a miniſter's 'favourite! I rejoice at thy good for-'tune, ſince thou uſeſt it ſo well.'

CHAP. VIII.

GIL BLAS BECOMES MORE AND MORE BELOVED BY HIS MASTER. SCIPIO RETURNS TO MADRID, AND GIVES AN ACCOUNT OF HIS JOURNEY TO SANTILLANE.

THE Count d'Olivarez, whom henceforth I ſhall call the count-duke, becauſe the king was pleaſed about this time to honour him with that title, had a foible which I diſcovered very much to my own advantage; and this was, a deſire of being beloved. As ſoon as he perceived that any one at-tached himſelf to him through inclina-tion, he immediately conceived a friend-ſhip for that adherent.

I took care not to neglect this ob-ſervation. I was not contented with barely doing what he commanded; I executed his orders with ſuch demon-ſtrations of zeal as quite won his heart. I ſtudied his taſte in all things, that I might conform myſelf to it; and anti-cipated his deſires as much as I could.

By this conduct, which ſeldom fails of ſucceſs, I inſenſibly became the fa-vourite of my maſter, who, on his part,

part, as I myſelf had the ſame foible, gained my whole ſoul, by the marks of affection which he beſtowed upon me; and I inſinuated myſelf ſo far into his favour, that I at length ſhared his confidence with Signior Carnero, his chief ſecretary.

Carnero had practiſed the ſame method of being agreeable to his excellency; and ſucceeded ſo well, that he was intruſted with the myſteries of the cabinet. That ſecretary and I were the two confidents of the prime-miniſter, and the depoſitories of his ſecrets; with this difference, that he ſpoke to Carnero of nothing but ſtate-affairs, and converſed with me on his own private concerns only: by theſe means, making as it were two ſeparate departments, with which we were both equally ſatisfied, we lived together without jealouſy, as without friendſhip. I had cauſe to be pleaſed with my ſituation, which giving me continual opportunities of being with the count-duke, I was always at hand to obſerve the very bottom of his ſoul; which he, though naturally diſſembling, ceaſed to conceal from me, when he no longer doubted the ſincerity of my attachment.

'Santillane,' ſaid he to me one day, 'thou haſt ſeen the Duke of Lerma 'enjoy an authority which looked 'more like the power of an abſo-'lute monarch than that of a favou-'rite miniſter: nevertheleſs, I am ſtill 'more lucky than he was, even at the 'higheſt point of his fortune. He 'had two formidable enemies in the 'Duke d'Uzeda his own ſon, and in 'the confeſſor of Philip the Third 'whereas I ſee not one perſon near 'the king, who has credit enough to 'hurt me, nor even one whom I ſu-'ſpect to be my foe.

'It is true, indeed,' continued he, 'that when I came to the miniſtry, I 'ſuffered none to be near the prince, 'but thoſe who were connected with 'me, either by blood or friendſhip. 'I have by vice-royalties or embaſſies 'got rid of all thoſe noblemen who, 'by their perſonal merit, might have 'acquired ſome portion of my ſove-'reign's favour, which I was reſolved 'entirely to poſſeſs: ſo that I may 'now ſafely ſay, no great man takes 'umbrage at my credit. Thou ſeeſt, 'Gil Blas,' added he, 'that I diſcloſe 'my heart to thee. As I have reaſon 'to think thee entirely devoted to me, 'I have choſen thee for my confident. 'Thou doſt not want underſtanding; 'art, I believe, modeſt, prudent, and 'diſcreet; in a word, thou ſeemeſt 'proper for executing twenty ſorts of 'commiſſions, which require a young 'man of extenſive underſtanding, who 'is at the ſame time in my intereſts.'

I was not proof againſt the flattering images which theſe words raiſed in my imagination. Some vapours of avarice and ambition mounted into my brain, and awaked in me thoſe ſentiments over which I thought I had gained a compleat triumph. I proteſted to the miniſter, that I would anſwer his intentions with all my power; and I kept myſelf ready to execute, without ſcruple, all the commiſſions with which he ſhould think proper to entruſt me.

While I was thus diſpoſed to raiſe new altars to Fortune, Scipio, returning from his journey, ſaid, 'I have 'not a tedious narration to make. 'The Lords of Leyva were charmed 'when I told them the reception you 'met with from the king, when he 'knew you, and with the behaviour 'of the Count d'Olivarez.'

Here I interrupted Scipio, ſaying, 'You would have given them ſtill 'more pleaſure, my friend, could you 'have told them on what footing I am 'now with his grace. The rapidity 'of the progreſs which I have made 'in his excellency's heart ſince thy 'departure is altogether prodigious.' —'God be praiſed, my dear maſter!' anſwered he; 'I foreſee that a ſplen-'did deſtiny awaits us.'—'Let us 'wave this ſubject,' ſaid I, 'and talk 'of Oviedo. Thou haſt been at the 'Aſturias; in what condition didſt 'thou leave my mother?'—'Ah, Sir!' he replied, aſſuming all of a ſudden a melancholy look, 'I have nothing but 'afflicting news for you from that 'quarter.'—'O Heaven!' cried I, 'my mother is certainly dead.'—'Six 'months ago,' ſaid my ſecretary, 'the 'good lady paid the tribute of nature, 'as well as your uncle Signior Gil 'Perez.'

I was deeply affected with my mother's death, although in my infancy I had never received from her thoſe careſſes which are neceſſary to make children grateful in the ſequel. I likewiſe

paid

paid thoſe tears which I owed to the good canon, for the care he had of my education. My grief, indeed, did not laſt long, but ſoon mellowed into a tender remembrance which I have always preſerved of my parents.

CHAP. IX.

HOW AND TO WHOM THE COUNT-DUKE MARRIED HIS ONLY DAUGHTER, WITH THE BITTER FRUITS WHICH THAT MARRIAGE PRODUCED.

SOON after the return of Coſcolina's ſon, the count-duke fell into a profound reverie, in which he remained for the ſpace of eight whole days. I imagined that he was meditating ſome great ſtroke of politicks; but the ſubject of his muſing regarded his own family only. 'Gil Blas,' ſaid he to me one afternoon, 'thou muſt 'have perceived that I am a good 'deal perplexed in mind. Yes, my 'child, I am wholly engroſſed by an 'affair upon which the repoſe of my 'life depends; and I will impart the 'ſecret to thee.

'Donna Maria, my daughter,' continued he, 'is now marriageable, and 'her heart is diſputed by a great number of noblemen. The Count de 'Niebles, eldeſt ſon of the Duke de 'Medina Sidonia, chief of the family 'of Guzman, and Don Lewis de Haro, eldeſt ſon of the Marquis de Carpio and my own ſiſter, are the two 'candidates who ſeem beſt intitled to 'the preference; eſpecially the laſt, 'who poſſeſſes merit ſo much ſuperior 'to that of his rivals, that all the 'court perſuade themſelves I ſhall 'make choice of him for my ſon-in-'law. Nevertheleſs, without entering 'into the reaſons which I have to exclude him, as well as the Count de 'Niebles, I will tell thee, that I have 'caſt my eyes on Don Ramires Nunnez de Guzman, Marquis de Toral, 'and chief of the family of Guzman 'd'Abrados: to this young noble-'man, and the children which he 'ſhall have by my daughter, I intend to leave my whole eſtate annexed to the title of Count d'Olivarez, to which I will join the quality of grandee; ſo that my grand-'children and their deſcendants, proceeding from the branch D'Abrados 'and that of Olivarez, will paſs for 'the eldeſt of the Guzman family.

'Well, Santillane,' added he, 'doſt 'thou not approve of my deſign?'— 'Pardon me, Sir,' anſwered I; 'the 'project is worthy of the genius that 'formed it; I am only afraid that 'the Duke de Medina Sidonia will 'murmur at it.'—'Let him murmur, 'if he pleaſes,' reſumed the miniſter; 'I ſhall give myſelf very little trouble 'about that. I don't love his branch, 'which hath uſurped the birth-right 'and titles thereunto attached over 'the houſe of Abrados. I ſhall mind 'his complaints leſs than the chagrin 'of my ſiſter the Marchioneſs de Carpio, in ſeeing her ſon diſappointed 'in his expectation of my daughter. 'But, after all, I intend to pleaſe 'myſelf, and it is already decided that 'Don Ramirez ſhall prevail over all 'his rivals.'

The count-duke, having taken this reſolution, gave a new mark of his ſingular policy, in putting it in practice. He preſented a petition to the king, begging that he and the queen would be pleaſed to beſtow his daughter in marriage, deſcribing the characters of the noblemen who were in purſuit of her, and leaving the choice entirely to their majeſties; but he did not fail, in ſpeaking of the Marquis de Toral, to ſhew that he was the moſt agreeable of them all. Whereupon the king, who had a blind complaiſance for his miniſter, returned this anſwer:

'I Believe Don Ramires Nunnez 'worthy of your daughter Donna 'Maria; nevertheleſs, take your own 'choice. The match which will ſuit 'you beſt will be the moſt agreeable 'to me.

'The KING.'

The miniſter affected to ſhew this anſwer; and pretending to look upon it as his prince's order, made haſte to marry his daughter to the Marquis de Toral; an event that very much diſpleaſed the Marchioneſs de Carpio, as well as the Guzmans, who had flattered themſelves with the hope of eſpouſing Donna Maria. Nevertheleſs, as they could not hinder the marriage, they affected to celebrate it with great

demon-

demonſtrations of joy. One would have thought that the whole family was charmed with the occaſion; but the malecontents were ſoon revenged in a manner very melancholy for the count-duke. Donna Maria* in ten months brought forth a daughter, which died in the birth, and in a few days after fell herſelf a victim to death. What a loſs was this for a father, who, to uſe the expreſſion, had no eyes but for his daughter; and who ſaw, in this event, the miſcarriage of his deſign, of taking the right of elderſhip from the branch of Medina Sidonia! He was ſo much affected, that for ſome days, he ſhut himſelf up, and would ſee nobody but me, who conforming myſelf to his immoderate grief, ſeemed as much afflicted as he. To tell the truth, I made uſe of this occaſion to ſhed freſh tears to the memory of Antonia. The reſemblance which her death had to that of the Marchioneſs de Toral, burſt open again the wound which was but imperfectly cured, and renewed my affliction ſo much, that the miniſter, overwhelmed as he was with his own ſorrow, could not help being ſtruck with mine. He was aſtoniſhed to ſee me enter ſo warmly into his chagrin. 'Gil Blas,' ſaid he one day, perceiving me plunged in the moſt melancholy ſadneſs, 'it is a ſweet 'conſolation for me to have ſuch a 'ſympathizing confident!'—'Ah, my 'lord!' anſwered I, giving to him all the honour of my affliction, 'I muſt 'be very ungrateful and hard-hearted 'indeed, if I did not ſincerely ſympathize with your grace. How can I 'conſider that you mourn the loſs of 'a daughter of accompliſhed merit, 'whom you tenderly loved, without 'mingling my tears with yours! No, 'my lord; I am ſo ſenſible of your 'goodneſs, that, as long as I live, I 'ſhall always ſhare in your pain as 'well as pleaſure.'

CHAP. X.

GIL BLAS BY ACCIDENT MEETS THE POET NUNNEZ, WHO TELLS HIM THAT HE HAS COMPOSED A TRAGEDY, WHICH IS IMMEDIATELY TO BE REPRESENTED ON THE PRINCE'S THEATRE. THE BAD SUCCESS OF THAT PIECE, WITH THE SURPRIZING GOOD LUCK WHICH ATTENDED IT'S FALL.

THE miniſter began to be conſoled, and I of conſequence to reſume my good-humour, when one evening I went out all alone to take the air in my coach, and met in my way the Auſtrian poet, whom I had not ſeen ſince he quitted the hoſpital. He being very well dreſſed, I took him into the coach, and we drove together to St. Jerome's Meadow.

'Mr. Nunnez,' ſaid I to him, 'I 'think myſelf very lucky in having 'met you by chance, otherwiſe I 'ſhould not have had the pleaſure—' 'No reproaches, Santillane,' ſaid he with precipitation; 'I ſincerely own 'that I had no intention to viſit thee, 'and thou ſhalt hear the reaſon. You 'promiſed me a good poſt, provided 'I ſhould abjure poetry; and I have 'found a very ſubſtantial one on condition that I make verſe. I have accepted this laſt, as moſt ſuitable to 'my humour. A friend of mine has 'introduced me into the family of 'Don Bertrand Gomez de Ribero, 'treaſurer of the king's gallies. This 'Don Bertrand, who wants to have 'a wit in his pay, finding my verſification very brilliant, has choſen 'me preferably to five or ſix authors 'who offered themſelves candidates 'for the employment of his private 'ſecretary.'

'I am very glad to hear it, my dear 'Fabricio,' ſaid I; 'for that Don 'Bertrand is in all appearance very 'rich.'—'Rich!' anſwered he; 'they 'ſay he has ſuch immenſe wealth, that 'he cannot count it. Be that as it 'will, my office is this: as he piques 'himſelf upon being gallant, and 'would paſs for a man of genius, he 'keeps a literary correſpondence with 'ſeveral very ſprightly ladies, and I 'lend him my pen to compoſe billets 'filled with wit and humour. I write 'for him, in verſe to one, in proſe to

* Mr. Le Sage has here deviated from the true hiſtory; for Donna Maria died unmarried, after having been betrothed to Raymond de Guzman, Marquis de Toral, afterwards created Duke de Medina-de-las Torres.

'another,

'to another, and ſometimes in perſon 'carry the letters to ſhew the multi-'plicity of my talents.'

'But thou haſt not told me,' ſaid I, 'what I chiefly deſire to know; 'art thou well paid for thy epiſtolary 'epigrams?'—'Very largely,' he replied; 'rich people are not always 'generous, and I know ſome of them 'who are mere ſcrubs; but Don Ber-'trand uſes me very nobly. Over and 'above two hundred piſtoles of fixed 'wages, I frequently receive from him 'ſmall gratifications, which put me 'in a condition to act the gentleman, 'and paſs my time agreeably with 'ſome authors, who are, like me, 'enemies to care.'—'But,' I reſumed, 'has thy treaſurer taſte enough to re-'liſh the beauties of a work of ge-'nius, and to perceive it's faults?' —'Not at all,' anſwered Nunnez; 'though he can talk ſpeciouſly, he is by 'no means a connoiſſeur. He gives 'himſelf out, however, for another Tar-'pa*, decides boldly, and ſupports 'his opinion with ſuch loudneſs and 'obſtinacy, that generally when he 'diſputes, his antagoniſt is obliged 'to yield, in order to avoid the ſhower 'of ill language with which he is 'wont to overwhelm his opponents.

'Thou mayeſt well believe,' purſued he, 'that I am very cautious of 'contradicting him, whatever cauſe he 'gives me for ſo doing; for, beſides the 'diſagreeable epithets which I ſhould 'certainly bring upon myſelf, I might 'poſſibly be turned out of doors. I 'therefore prudently applaud what he 'praiſes, and diſapprove of every 'thing which he condemns. By this 'complaiſance, which coſts me no-'thing, becauſe I poſſeſs the art of 'accommodating myſelf to the cha-'racters of thoſe who can befriend 'me, I have gained the friendſhip and 'eſteem of my patron. He has en-'gaged me to compoſe a tragedy on a 'ſubject which he ſuggeſted. I have 'accordingly finiſhed it under his eye; 'and if it ſucceeds I ſhall owe one 'part of my glory to his good ad-'vice.'

I aſked the title of his tragedy, and he told me it was called, the Count de Saldagne, informing me, at the ſame time, that it would be repreſented in three days on the Prince's Theatre. 'I 'wiſh,' anſwered I, 'that it may have 'a great run; and I have ſuch a good 'opinion of thy genius as to hope it 'will.'—'I hope ſo too,' ſaid he; 'but there is no dependence upon ſuch 'hope, ſo uncertain are authors of the 'event of a dramatick piece.' At length the firſt day of it's repreſen-tation arrived; and as I could not go to the play, being hindered by a com-miſſion I had to perform for his grace, all that I could do was to ſend Scipio thither, that I might at leaſt know that very evening the ſucceſs of a perfor-mance in which I intereſted myſelf. After having waited with impatience, I ſaw him return with a look from which I conceived a bad omen. 'Well,' ſaid I; 'how hath the Count de Sal-'dagne been received by the publick?' —'Very brutally,' anſwered he; 'ne-'ver was a piece more barbarouſly 'uſed. I came away incenſed at the 'inſolence of the pit.'—'And I,' ſaid I, 'am incenſed at the fury of 'Nunnez, in compoſing plays. Muſt 'he not have loſt his judgment entire-'ly, to prefer the ignominious ſhouts 'and hiſſes of an audience to the hap-'py lot which I could have procured 'for him?' Thus through friendſhip did I inveigh againſt the Auſtrian poet, and afflicted myſelf at the misfortune of his piece, while he exulted in the event.

Two days after he actually came to my houſe in a tranſport of joy. 'San-'tillane,' cried he, 'I am come to 'ſhare with thee the extreme pleaſure 'which I feel! In compoſing a bad 'play, my friend, I have made my 'fortune. Thou knoweſt the ſtrange 'reception which the Count de Sal-'dagne met with; all the ſpectators 'exclaimed againſt him as if for a 'wager, and to that general exclama-'tion I owe my good fortune.'

Aſtoniſhed to hear the poet Nunnez talk in that manner; 'How, Fabricio!' ſaid I, 'is it poſſible that the fall of 'thy tragedy can juſtify thy immode-'rate joy?'—'Yes, ſure,' anſwered 'I told thee before that Don Ber-

* Sp. Metius Tarpa, a famous critick of the Auguſtan age: his tribunal was in the temple of Apollo, where he ſat with four colleagues, to judge the merit of all theatrical performances, before they were exhibited on the ſtage.

'trand had inſerted ſome of his own 'compoſition in my piece, which of 'conſequence he thought excellent. 'He was violently piqued to find the 'ſpectators of a different opinion, and 'this morning ſaid to me, "Nunnez, "*Victrix cauſa diis placuit, ſed victa "Catoni*: if the publick is diſpleaſed "with thy production, in recompence, "it pleaſes me, and that is enough. "To conſole thee for the bad taſte of "the age, I will give thee two thou-"ſand crowns a year on my eſtate; "let us go inſtantly to my notary, and "have the deed drawn." We went 'thither accordingly, the treaſurer has 'ſigned the deed, and paid me the firſt 'year advance.'

I congratulated Fabricio on the unhappy fate of the Count de Saldagne, ſince it had turned out ſo much to the author's advantage. 'Thou hadſt 'reaſon,' continued he, 'to compli-'ment me on the occaſion; how hap-'py am I in having been ſoundly hiſſed! 'If the publick had been kind enough 'to honour me with applauſe, what 'ſervice ſhould I have received from 'it? Nothing of conſequence; I ſhould 'have got but a very moderate ſum 'for my labours, whereas it's hiſſes 'have all of a ſudden made me eaſy 'for life.'

CHAP. XI.

SANTILLANE OBTAINS AN EMPLOYMENT FOR SCIPIO, WHO DEPARTS FOR NEW SPAIN.

MY ſecretary could not without envy look upon the unexpected good fortune of the poet Nunnez, which was the ſole ſubject of his diſcourſe during eight whole days. 'I 'admire,' ſaid he, 'the caprice of 'Fortune, that ſometimes delights in 'loading a deteſtable author with 'wealth, while ſhe leaves men of ge-'nius in miſery: I wiſh ſhe would 'take it in her head to enrich me alſo 'in the ſpace of one night.'—'That 'may very well happen,' ſaid I, 'and 'much ſooner than you imagine. 'Thou art here in her temple; for I 'think we may call the prime-mini-'ſter's houſe the temple of Fortune, 'where favours are often beſtowed 'which all of a ſudden enrich thoſe 'who obtain them.'—'That is true, 'Sir,' anſwered he; 'but they muſt 'be waited for with patience.'—'Once 'more, Scipio,' ſaid I, 'make your-'ſelf eaſy; perhaps you are on the 'point of having ſome good poſt.' A few days after, an opportunity actually offered of employing him advantageouſly in the ſervice of the count-duke, and I did not let it eſcape.

Diſcourſing one morning with Don Raymond Caporis, ſteward of the prime-miniſter, our converſation turned upon his excellency's revenues. 'His 'grace,' ſaid he, 'enjoys the com-'manderies of all the military or-'ders, which are worth forty thouſand 'crowns per annum, and he is obliged 'to wear the croſs of Alcantara only. 'Beſides, his three poſts of great 'chamberlain, maſter of the horſe, 'and grand chancellor of the Indies, 'bring in two hundred thouſand more; 'and all that is nothing in compariſon 'to the immenſe ſums which he draws 'from America. I will tell you how: 'when the king's ſhips ſet ſail from 'Seville or Liſbon for that country, 'he embarks on board of them wine, 'oil, and corn, which his eſtate of 'Olivarez affords, and he pays no 'duty. He ſells theſe commodities in 'the Indies for four times the price 'which they would yield in Spain, 'then employs the money in purchaſing 'ſpices, colours, and other things, 'which are bought for almoſt nothing 'in that new world, and afterwards 'are ſold at a high rate in Europe. 'He has already got many millions 'by this traffick, without doing the 'leaſt prejudice to the king. What 'will not ſurprize you,' continued he, 'is, that the people employed in tran-'ſacting this commerce always return 'enriched, the count allowing them 'to take care of their own fortune, 'while they manage his.'

Coſcolina's ſon, who liſtened to our diſcourſe, could not hear Don Raymond talk thus, without interrupting him. 'Zooks! Signior Caporis, I 'ſhould be glad to be one of theſe 'people, for I have long wiſhed to 'ſee Mexico.'—'Your curioſity will 'ſoon be ſatisfied,' ſaid the ſteward to him, 'if Signior de Santillane has 'no objection to your deſire. Though 'I am very nice in the choice of thoſe 'whom I ſend to the Indies on this

'employ-

'employment, (for I chuſe them all) 'I will, without heſitation, inſert you 'in my regiſter, if your maſter deſires 'it.'—'You will oblige me in ſo doing,' ſaid I to Don Raymond; 'pray, 'give me that mark of your friend-'ſhip. Scipio is a young man whom 'I love; beſides, he has a great deal 'of underſtanding, and will behave 'in an irreproachable manner. In a 'word, I can anſwer for him as for 'myſelf.'

'If that be the caſe,' reſumed Caporis, 'let him repair immediately to 'Seville; the ſhips will ſail for the 'Indies in a month. He ſhall have a 'letter from me at his departure, for 'a man who will give him all ne-'ceſſary inſtructions to enrich himſelf, 'without prejudiſing the intereſts of 'his excellency, which muſt ever be 'looked upon as ſacred.'

Scipio, charmed with this employment, made haſte to ſet out for Seville, with a thouſand crowns which I gave him, to buy wine and oil in Andaluſia, and put him in a condition to trade in the Indies on his own bottom. Nevertheleſs, glad as he was to make a voyage by which he hoped to profit ſo much, he could not leave me without ſhedding tears, and I could not behold his departure with indifference.

CHAP. XII.

DON ALPHONSO DE LEYVA COMES TO MADRID; THE MOTIVE OF HIS JOURNEY. GIL BLAS IS AFFLICTED AT THE CAUSE, BUT REJOICES AT THE CONSEQUENCE OF IT.

SCIPIO was ſcarce gone, when a page belonging to the miniſter brought to me a billet containing theſe words: 'If Signior de Santillane will 'give himſelf the trouble to call at 'St. Gabriel's Head in Toledo Street, 'he will there ſee one of his beſt 'friends.'—'Who can this anony-'mous friend be?' ſaid I to myſelf: 'Why does he conceal his name? He 'wants, I ſuppoſe, to give me the plea-'ſure of ſurprize.' I went out immediately to Toledo Street, and going to the appointed place, was not a little aſtoniſhed to ſee Don Alphonſo de Leyva. 'Are you here, my lord!'—'Yes, my dear Gil Blas,' anſwered he, hugging me in his arms; 'it is 'Don Alphonſo himſelf whom you 'ſee.'—'What brings you to Ma-'drid?' ſaid I. 'I will both ſur-'prize and afflict you,' he replied, 'in 'telling the cauſe of my journey. I 'am deprived of the government of 'Valencia, and the prime-miniſter has 'ordered me to court to give an ac-'count of my conduct.' I remained a whole quarter of an hour mute and thunderſtruck, then recovering myſelf, aſked what he was accuſed of. 'I 'know nothing of the matter,' anſwered he; 'but impute my diſgrace 'to a viſit which I made about three 'weeks ago to the Cardinal Duke of 'Lerma, who has been a month con-'fined to his caſtle of Denia.'

'O! truly,' ſaid I, interrupting him, 'you have reaſon to attribute 'your misfortune to that indiſcreet 'viſit; you need ſeek for the cauſe of 'it no where elſe; and give me leave to 'ſay, you did not conſult your uſual 'prudence, when you went to viſit 'the diſgraced miniſter.'—'The error 'is now committed,' ſaid he; 'and I 'have taken my reſolution with a good 'grace. I will retire with my family 'to the caſtle of Leyva, where I will 'ſpend the reſt of my days in profound 'peace. All that gives me concern, 'is my being obliged to appear before 'a haughty miniſter, who may poſſibly 'treat me uncivilly; a ſufficient morti-'fication to a Spaniard! nevertheleſs 'it muſt be borne; but before I would 'make this ſubmiſſion, I was willing 'to ſpeak with you.'

'My lord,' ſaid I, 'don't preſent 'yourſelf before the miniſter until I 'know what you are accuſed of: per-'haps the evil is not without remedy. 'Be that as it will, you muſt allow 'me, if you pleaſe, to exert myſelf in 'your favour as much as gratitude 'and friendſhip require.' So ſaying, I left him at the inn, aſſuring him that he ſhould hear from me ſoon.

As I had not meddled in ſtate-affairs ſince the two memorials, of which eloquent mention has been made, I went to Carnero, and aſked if it was true that the government of Valencia had been taken from Don Alphonſo de Leyva. He anſwered in the affirmative, but ſaid he was ignorant of the cauſe. Upon this I formed a reſolution, with-

out heſitation to addreſs myſelf to his grace, that I might learn from his own mouth what cauſe he had to complain of Don Cæſar's ſon.

I was ſo much penetrated with this troubleſome event, that I had no occaſion to affect a melancholy look to appear afflicted in the eyes of the count-duke. 'What is the matter, Santillane?' ſaid he, as ſoon as he ſaw me; 'I perceive an impreſſion of ſorrow on thy countenance, and even the tears ready to drop from thine eyes: has any body injured thee? Speak, and thou ſhalt be revenged.' —'My lord,' anſwered I, weeping, 'I could not conceal my ſorrow from you if I would: I am quite in deſpair, being told that Don Alphonſo de Leyva is no longer governor of Valencia; for I could not have heard a piece of news that would affect me more.'—'What ſayeſt thou, Gil Blas?' replied the miniſter aſtoniſhed; what concern canſt thou have with that Don Alphonſo and his government?' I then gave him a detail of all the obligations I lay under to the Lords of Leyva; and afterwards recounted in what manner I had obtained from the Duke of Lerma the government in queſtion for Don Cæſar's ſon.

When his excellency had heard me to an end, with an attention full of kindneſs for me, he ſaid, 'Dry up thy tears, my friend. I not only was ignorant of what thou haſt told me, but own alſo that I looked upon Don Alphonſo as a creature of the Cardinal of Lerma: put thyſelf in my place; would not the viſit which he made to his eminence make thee ſuſpect him? I am willing to believe, however, that having received his employment from the cardinal, he took that ſtep out of pure gratitude. I am ſorry for having diſplaced a man who owed his poſt to thee; but if I have deſtroyed thy work, I can repair it. I will even do more for thee than the Duke of Lerma did: thy friend Don Alphonſo was no more than governor of the city of Valencia, and I will make him vice-roy of the kingdom of Arragon: thou mayeſt go and inform him of this piece of news, and deſire him to come and take the oaths.'

When I heard theſe words, I paſſed from the extremity of grief to an exceſs of joy, which diſturbed my intellects ſo much, that my diſorder appeared in the compliment of thanks which I made to his grace, who was not, however, diſpleaſed at my confuſion. But when I told him that Don Alphonſo was already at Madrid, he ſaid I might introduce him that very day. I ran immediately to the St. Gabriel, where Don Cæſar's ſon was overjoyed to hear of his new employment: he could ſcarce believe what I ſaid, ſo improbable did it ſeem to him, that the miniſter, whatever friendſhip he had for me, was capable of beſtowing vice-royalties on my recommendation. I conducted him to the count-duke, who received him very politely, and told him, he had behaved ſo well in his government of the city of Valencia, that the king, thinking him qualified to fill a higher place, had named him to the vice-royalty of Arragon. 'Beſides,' added he, 'that dignity is not above your birth; and the nobility of Arragon cannot murmur at the choice of the court.'

His excellency made no mention of me, and the publick never knew the part which I acted in this affair: a circumſtance that ſaved Don Alphonſo and the miniſter a great many ſatirical remarks that people might have paſſed upon a vice-roy of my making.

As ſoon as Don Cæſar's ſon was certain of the place, he diſpatched an expreſs to Valencia to inform his father and Seraphina of his good fortune, and they ſoon came to Madrid: their firſt care was to find me, and overwhelm me with thanks. What a moving and glorious ſight was it for me, to ſee myſelf embraced with eagerneſs by the three perſons in the world whom I loved moſt! As ſenſible of my zeal and affection as the honour which the poſt of vice-roy did to their family, their expreſſions of gratitude to me were infinite: they even ſpoke to me as to one of their own rank: they ſeemed to have forgot that I was their ſervant; and thought they could never enough manifeſt their friendſhip. To ſuppreſs uſeleſs circumſtances, Don Alphonſo having received his letters-patent, thanked the king and his miniſter, and having taken the uſual oaths, ſet out with his family from Madrid, to go and fix his abode

abode at Saragoſſa *, where he made his entrance with all poſſible magnificence: and the Arragonians ſhewed by their acclamations that they were very well pleaſed with the vice-roy whom I had ſet over them.

CHAP. XIII.

GIL BLAS MEETS DON GASTON DE COGOLLOS AND DON ANDREA DE TORDESILLAS AT THE PALACE. THE CONCLUSION OF THE STORY OF DON GASTON AND DONNA HELENA DE GALISTEO. SANTILLANE DOES AN IMPORTANT PIECE OF SERVICE TO TORDESILLAS.

I Swam in joy for having ſo luckily changed a diſplaced governor into a vice-roy: even the Lords of Leyva were leſs pleaſed at it than I was. I ſoon had another opportunity of employing my credit for a friend; which I think I ſhould relate, to perſuade the reader that I was no longer the ſame Gil Blas who ſold the favour of the court under the preceding miniſtry.

Being one day in the king's antichamber, diſcourſing with noblemen, who, knowing my ſituation with the prime-miniſter, did not diſdain my converſation; I perceived in the crowd Don Gaſton de Cogollos, that ſtate-priſoner whom I had left in the tower of Segovia, and the keeper Don Andrea de Tordeſillas along with him. I immediately quitted my company to go and embrace theſe two friends, whom, if they were aſtoniſhed to ſee me there, I was ſtill more ſo to meet in that place. After ſome warm hugs on both ſides, Don Gaſton ſaid to me, 'Signior de Santillane, we 'have a world of queſtions to aſk mutually, and this is not a convenient 'place for that purpoſe: allow me to 'conduct you to a houſe where Signior 'de Tordeſillas and I will be glad to 'have a long converſation with you.' I conſented to this propoſal: we ſqueezed through the crowd, and going out of the palace, found Don Gaſton's coach waiting for us in the ſtreet; we went into it all three, and were driven to the great market-place where the bull-fights are performed, and there Cogollos lived in a very handſome houſe. 'Signior Gil Blas,' ſaid Don Andrea, when we were ſet in a hall magnificently furniſhed, 'at your de-'parture from Segovia you ſeemed to 'hate the court, and to be reſolved to 'remove from it for ever.'—'That 'was actually my deſign,' anſwered I; 'and ſo long as the late king lived, I 'did not change my ſentiments; but 'when I underſtood that the prince 'his ſon was on the throne, I was 'willing to ſee if the new monarch 'would know me again; he did re-'collect me, and I had the good for-'tune to be favourably received: 'he himſelf recommended me to the 'prime-miniſter, who has conceived 'a friendſhip for me, and with whom 'I am in ſtill greater favour than 'ever I was with the Duke of Ler-'ma. This, Signior Don Andrea, 'is what I had to tell you. Now, 'pray, let me know if you are ſtill 'keeper of the tower of Segovia.'—'No, indeed,' he replied: 'the count-'duke has put another in my place, 'in all probability believing me wholly 'devoted to his predeceſſor.'—'And 'as for me,' ſaid Don Gaſton, 'I 'was ſet at liberty for a quite contrary 'reaſon. The prime-miniſter no ſooner 'learned that I was impriſoned at Se-'govia by the Duke of Lerma's order, 'than he ordered me to be diſcharged: 'it now remains, Signior Gil Blas, to 'inform you of what has happened to 'me ſince I have been enlarged.

'The firſt thing I did,' continued he, 'after having thanked Don An-'drea for his kindneſs to me during 'my confinement, was to repair to 'Madrid, and preſent myſelf before 'the Count-Duke d'Olivarez, who 'ſaid to me, "Don't be afraid that "the misfortune which hath happen-"ed to you will in the leaſt prejudice "your reputation: you are now fully "juſtified; and I am the more con-

* Saragoſſa, formerly Cæſarea Auguſta, a fine large city, and the capital of Arragon, in Spain, ſurrounded with old walls, and other antique fortifications, at the confluence of the rivers Ebro, Galleyo, and Guerva, which run in a ſerpentine manner through the neighbourhood, rendering it very fruitful. It has an archbiſhop, ſovereign council, and is the ſeat of an univerſity and inquiſition.

"vinced

" vinced of your innocence, becauſe " the Marquis of Villarcal, whoſe ac- " complice you were ſuſpected to be, " was not guilty; for though he is a " Portugueze, and even related to the " Duke of Braganza, he is not ſo " much in his intereſts as in thoſe of " the king my maſter. Your inti- " macy with that marquis is therefore " no reproach upon you; and, in or- " der to repair the injuſtice which you " ſuffered, in being accuſed of trea- " ſon, the king has beſtowed upon " you a lieutenancy in the Spaniſh " guards." I accepted the commiſ- ſion, begging that his excellency would allow me, before I ſhould enter upon my duty, to go to Coria and vi- ſit my aunt Donna Eleonora de Lax- arilla. The miniſter gave me leave for a month, and I ſet out, accom- panied by one lacquey only. We had already paſſed Colmenar, and were engaged in a hollow road, be- tween two mountains, when we per- ceived a cavalier defending himſelf valiantly againſt three men, who at- tacked him all together. I did not heſitate, but rode to his ſuccour, and put myſelf on his ſide. I ob- ſerved, while we fought, that our enemies were maſked, and that we had to do with vigorous ſwordſmen: however, in ſpite of their ſtrength and ſkill, we remained conquerors; for I pierced one of the three, who fell from his horſe, and the other two immediately betook themſelves to flight. The victory, indeed, was not much leſs fatal to us than to the wretch whom I killed; ſince, after the action, my companion and I found ourſelves dangerouſly wound- ed. But you may gueſs what was my ſurprize, when in this cavalier I recollected Combados, the huſband of Donna Helena! He was no leſs aſtoniſhed when he ſaw that I was his defender: " Ah, Don Gaſton!" cried he, " was it you then who " came to my aſſiſtance! when you ſo " generouſly eſpouſed my cauſe, you " little thought it was that of the " man who deprived you of your miſ- " treſs."—" I was really ignorant of " it," anſwered I; " but had I known " you, do you imagine that I ſhould " have ſcrupled to do what I have " done? are you ſo much miſtaken in " me as to think me ſo baſe?"—" No, " no," he replied; " I have a better " opinion of your virtue; and if I die " of the wounds which I have re- " ceived, I hope yours will not hin- " der you from profiting by my death."—" Combados," ſaid I, " although " I have not yet forgot Donna Hele- " na, know, that I don't deſire to en- " joy her at the expence of your life; " I am even glad of having contri- " buted towards ſaving you from the " ſwords of three aſſaſſins, ſince in " that I have performed an action " agreeable to your wife." While we converſed in this manner, my lacquey alighted, and approaching the dead cavalier, took off his maſk, and diſcovered features which Com- bados immediately knew. " It is " Caprara!" cried he, " that perfi- " dious couſin, who, out of ſpite, for " having been diſappointed of a rich " eſtate which he unjuſtly diſputed " with me, has a long time cheriſhed " the deſire of murdering me, and at " length choſen this day to put it in " execution; but Heaven hath per- " mitted him to fall a victim to his " own deſign!"

'Meanwhile, our blood flowed a- pace, and we grew weaker and weak- er: nevertheleſs, wounded as we were, we had ſtrength enough to go to the town of Villarejo, which was but two gun-ſhots from the field of battle. We alighted at the firſt inn we came to, and ſending for ſur- geons, one was brought, who had the reputation of being very expert in his profeſſion. He examined our wounds, which he found dangerous, then dreſſed them, and next day, after having taken off the dreſſings, declared that the wounds of Don Blas were mortal: he judged more favourably of mine; and his prog- noſticks were fulfilled.

'Combados, hearing his doom, thought of nothing but preparing for death: he likewiſe diſpatched an ex- preſs to inform his wife of what had happened, and of his preſent melan- choly ſituation; upon which Donna Helena, ſetting out immediately, ſoon arrived at Villarejo, her mind diſturbed with a diſquiet which had two different cauſes: the danger in which her huſband was, and the dread of feeling, at ſight of me, a flame, which was but half extin-

'guiſhed,

'guiſhed, revive, created a terrible 'agitation in her breaſt. "Madam," 'ſaid Don Blas, when ſhe came into 'his preſence, "you arrive time "enough to receive my laſt adieu: "I am going to die; and I regard "my death as the puniſhment of "Heaven, for having by a deceit de-"prived you of Don Gaſton. Far "from murmuring at my fate, I ex-"hort you to reſtore to him the heart "which I unjuſtly ſeized." Donna 'Helena anſwered only by her tears; 'and truly it was the beſt reply ſhe 'could make, as ſhe was not as yet 'ſo much detached from me, as to 'forget the artifice which he had prac-'tiſed to make her break her vows.

'As the ſurgeon had prognoſticated, 'Combados died of his wounds in leſs 'than three days, while mine indi-'cated a ſpeedy cure. The young wi-'dow, who was wholly engroſſed by 'the care of tranſporting her huſ-'band's corſe to Coria, in order to 'perform all the funeral honours 'which ſhe owed to his aſhes, depart-'ed from Villarejo, after having en-'quired (through pure politeneſs) a-'bout my health. As ſoon as I could 'follow her, I ſet out alſo for Coria, 'where, my recovery being com-'pleated, my aunt Donna Eleonora, 'and Don George de Galiſteo, reſolv-'ed that Helena and I ſhould be mar-'ried forthwith, leſt Fortune ſhould 'again part us by ſome unlucky ac-'cident. This marriage was cele-'brated in private, on account of the 'too recent death of Don Blas; and 'a few days after I returned to Ma-'drid with Donna Helena. As I had 'exceeded the time preſcribed by the 'count-duke for my journey, I was 'afraid that he had given to another 'the lieutenancy which he had pro-'miſed to me: but he had not diſ-'poſed of it, and was ſo good as to 'admit the excuſes which I made for 'my delay.

'I am now,' continued Cogollos, 'lieutenant of the Spaniſh guard, am 'pleaſed with my employment, and 'have contracted ſome agreeable 'friends, with whom I live very hap-'pily.'—'I wiſh I could ſay as much,' 'cried Don Andrea; 'but I am very 'far from being ſatisfied with my con-'dition: I have loſt my poſt, which 'was pretty advantageous; and I 'have no friends who have credit 'enough to procure me ſuch an-'other.'—'Pardon me, Signior Don 'Andrea,' ſaid I, ſmiling, 'you 'have in me a friend who is good 'for ſomething. I have already ſaid 'that I am ſtill better beloved by the 'count-duke than ever I was by the 'Duke of Lerma, and you have the 'aſſurance to tell me to my face, that 'you have not a friend who can pro-'cure a poſt for you. Have I not 'once before done you ſuch a piece 'of ſervice? Remember that, by the 'intereſt of the Archbiſhop of Gre-'nada, I was the occaſion of your 'being named to exerciſe an employ-'ment at Mexico, where you would 'have made your fortune, if love had 'not detained you in the city of Ali-'cant; and I am at preſent more 'capable of ſerving you, having the 'ear of the prime-miniſter.'—'I 'truſt wholly to you then,' replied Tordeſillas; 'but,' added he, ſmiling, in his turn, 'pray, don't ſend me to 'New Spain; I will not go thither 'if I was to be made chief judge of 'Mexico.'

We were interrupted in this part of our converſation by Donna Helena, who came into the hall, and whoſe amiable perſon equalled the charming idea which I had formed of her beau-ty. 'Madam,' ſaid Cogollos to her, 'this is Signior de Santillane, of whom 'you have heard me ſpeak, and whoſe 'agreeable company hath often ſu-'ſpended my ſorrows while I was in 'priſon.'—'Yes, Madam,' ſaid I to Donna Helena; 'my converſation pleaſ-'ed him, becauſe you was always the 'ſubject of it.' Don George's daugh-ter made a modeſt reply to my compli-ment; after which I took my leave of this couple, proteſting that I was ra-viſhed to find their long paſſion was at length crowned by a happy marriage. Then, addreſſing myſelf to Tordeſillas, I deſired him to give me his direc-tion, which when I received, 'With-'out bidding you adieu, Don Andrea,' ſaid I, 'I hope in leſs than eight days 'you will ſee that I have power as well 'as friendſhip.' My words were ſoon verified: the very next day, the count-duke furniſhed me with an occaſion to oblige the keeper. 'Santillane,' ſaid his excellency, 'the place of governor 'of the royal priſon at Valladolid is

'vacant;

'vacant; it brings in more than three 'hundred piſtoles per annum, and I 'am reſolved to beſtow it upon thee.' —'I would not have it, my lord,' anſwered I, 'were it worth ten thou-'ſand ducats yearly: I renounce all 'poſts that I cannot enjoy without re-'moving from your grace.'—'But,' reſumed the miniſter, 'thou mayeſt very 'well enjoy this, without being obliged 'to leave Madrid, except to go ſome-'times to Valladolid to viſit the pri-'ſon.'—'You may ſay what you 'pleaſe,' I replied; 'I will not ac-'cept of that employment, but on 'condition that I ſhall be allowed to 'reſign in favour of a brave gentle-'man, called Don Andrea de Torde-'ſillas, formerly keeper of the tower 'of Segovia: I ſhould love to make 'him that preſent, as an acknowledg-'ment for the kind treatment I received 'from him during my confinement.'

The miniſter, laughing at this diſ-courſe, ſaid, 'I ſee, Gil Blas, thou 'haſt a mind to make a governor of 'a royal priſon, as thou haſt made a 'vice-roy. Well, be it ſo, my friend; 'I give to thee this vacant place for 'Tordeſillas: but tell me freely what 'advantage thou wilt reap from it; 'for I don't believe thee fool enough 'to employ thy credit for nothing.'— 'My lord,' anſwered I, 'ought not a 'man to pay his debts? Don Andrea, 'in the moſt diſintereſted manner, did 'me all the ſervice he could: ought 'not I to requite his generoſity?'— 'You are becoming very diſintereſted, 'Mr. Santillane,' ſaid his excellency: 'I think you were not ſo much ſo un-'der the laſt miniſter!'—'I own it,' ſaid I; 'my morals were corrupted by 'bad example; as every thing then 'was put to ſale, I conformed myſelf 'to the faſhion; and as every thing is 'now given away, I have reſumed my 'integrity.'

I procured, then, the government of the royal priſon of Valladolid for Don Andrea; whom, in a little time, I ſent to that city, as well ſatisfied with his new ſettlement as I was with the op-portunity of acquitting myſelf of the obligations I owed him.

CHAP. XIV.

SANTILLANE VISITS THE POET NUNNEZ: AN ACCOUNT OF THE PERSONS WHOM HE FOUND, AND THE DISCOURSE WHICH HE HEARD AT HIS LODGINGS.

ONE afternoon I was ſeized with an inclination of viſiting the As-turian poet, being curious to know how he was lodged. I went accord-ingly to the houſe of Signior Don Ber-trand Gomez de Ribero, and aſking for Nunnez, 'He does not live here,' ſaid the porter; 'but lodges there at 'preſent, having hired the back-ſide 'of the houſe.' So ſaying, he pointed to a houſe in the neighbourhood, whi-ther I went; and, after having croſſed a ſmall court, entered into a naked hall, where I found my friend Fabri-cio ſtill at table, with five or ſix of his companions, whom he treated that day.

They had almoſt dined, and con-ſequently were in a trim for diſputing; but as ſoon as they perceived me, their noiſy diſcourſe ſubſided into profound ſilence. Nunnez got up with great eagerneſs to receive me, crying, 'Gen-'tlemen, this is Signior de Santillane, 'who is ſo good as to honour me with 'a viſit; pray join me in paying your 'reſpects to the favourite of the prime-'miniſter.' At theſe words all the gueſts got up to ſalute me; and, in favour of the title which I had received, treated me with great civility and re-ſpect. Although I was neither hun-gry nor thirſty, I could not excuſe myſelf from ſitting down at table with them; and was even obliged to ho-nour the toaſt which they had pro-poſed.

As I imagined that my preſence was a check upon their converſation, 'Gen-'tlemen,' ſaid I, 'I have interrupted 'your diſcourſe: pray, reſume it, or I 'will be gone.'—'Theſe gentlemen,' ſaid Fabricio, 'were talking of the 'Iphigenia of Euripides. The Bat-'chelor Melchior de Villegas, who is 'a critick of the firſt order, was aſking 'of Signior Don Jacinto de Romarata 'what was the moſt intereſting cir-'cumſtance of that tragedy.'—'Yes,' ſaid Don Jacinto; 'and I anſwered, 'that it was the danger of Iphigenia.' —'And I,' ſaid the batchelor, 're-'plied, (and I am ready to demon-'ſtrate my aſſertion) that the danger 'is not the moſt intereſting part of the 'ſubject.'—'What is then?' cried the old

old Licentiate Gabriel de Leon. 'It is 'the wind,' ſaid the batchelor.

The whole company burſt out into laughing at this repartee, which I could not believe ſerious; I thought that Melchior pronounced it with a view of enlivening the converſation; but I did not know this virtuoſo, who was a man that did not at all underſtand raillery. 'Laugh as much as you 'pleaſe, gentlemen,' replied he, dryly; 'I maintain that the wind alone 'ought to intereſt, ſurprize, and move 'the ſpectator: figure to yourſelves a 'numerous army aſſembled to go and 'beſiege Troy; conceive all the impatience of the chiefs and ſoldiers to 'execute that enterprize, that they 'may ſpeedily return into Greece, 'where they have left what is moſt 'dear to them, their wives, children, 'and houſhold goods; in the mean 'time, a curſed contrary wind detains 'them at Aulis, ſeems to nail them 'to the port, and if it does not change, 'they cannot go and beſiege the city 'of Priam: it is the wind, therefore, 'which conſtitutes the moſt intereſting 'point of that tragedy. I ſhare with 'the Greeks, I eſpouſe their cauſe, 'my whole wiſh is the departure of 'the fleet, and I ſee with indifference 'the danger of Iphigenia, ſince her 'death is the only means of obtaining 'a favourable wind from the gods.'

Villegas had no ſooner done ſpeaking, than the laugh was renewed at his expence. Nunnez was ſo miſchievous as to ſupport his opinion, that he might afford more game to the ralliers, who began to paſs a great many jokes upon the wind; but the batchelor, beholding them all with a phlegmatick haughty look, treated them as ignorant and vulgar minds. I expected every moment to ſee them warm, and to go to loggerheads, the uſual end of their diſſertations: but I was baulked in my expectations; they were contented with reviling one another, and withdrew when they had eaten and drank their fill.

When they were gone, I aſked Fabricio, why he did not live ſtill with his treaſurer; and if he had quarrelled with him. 'Quarrelled!' anſwered he; 'God forbid! I am more in fa'vour than ever with Signior Don 'Bertrand, who has allowed me to 'lodge by myſelf. I have, therefore, 'hired theſe lodgings, to receive my 'friends, and make merry with them 'in full liberty, which is often the 'caſe: for thou knoweſt that I am 'not of an humour to leave much 'wealth to my heirs; and, what is 'very happy for me, I am at preſent 'in a condition of enjoying parties of 'pleaſure every day.'—'I am overjoyed to hear it, my dear Nunnez,' ſaid I; 'and I cannot help congratulating 'thee again upon the ſucceſs of thy 'laſt tragedy: the whole eight hundred dramatick pieces of the great 'Lope have not brought him one 'fourth of what thou haſt got by the 'Count de Saldagne.'

END OF THE ELEVENTH BOOK.

THE ADVENTURES OF GIL BLAS OF SANTILLANE.

BOOK XII.

CHAP. I.

GIL BLAS IS SENT TO TOLEDO BY THE MINISTER: THE MOTIVE AND SUCCESS OF HIS JOURNEY.

DURING a whole month almoſt, his grace had been ſaying to me every day, 'Santillane, the time 'draws near when I ſhall 'ſet thy addreſs to work;' and ſtill the time did not come. At length, however, it arrived; and his excellency ſpoke to me in theſe words: 'It is reported that, in the company 'of players belonging to Toledo, 'there is a young actreſs whoſe talents 'make a great noiſe: it is ſaid that 'ſhe dances and ſings divinely, and 'quite captivates the ſpectators by her 'declamation. I am aſſured alſo, 'that ſhe has a conſiderable ſhare of 'beauty. Such a genius deſerves to 'appear at court. The king loves 'plays, muſick, and dancing; and he 'muſt not be deprived of the pleaſure 'of ſeeing and hearing a perſon of 'ſuch extraordinary merit. I have 'reſolved, therefore, to ſend thee to 'Toledo, to judge by thyſelf whether 'or not ſhe is actually ſuch a wonder-'ful actreſs. I will be governed by 'the impreſſion ſhe ſhall make upon 'thee, as I depend a great deal on thy 'diſcernment.' I anſwered, that I ſhould give his grace a good account of that affair; and prepared for my departure with one lacquey only, whom I ordered to put off the miniſter's livery, that things might be done the more myſteriouſly; and this was very much to his excellency's taſte. I ſet out then for Toledo, where, when I arrived, I alighted at an inn near the caſtle. Scarce had I ſet my foot to the ground, when the landlord, taking me, doubtleſs, for ſome country gentleman, ſaid to me, 'Signior Cavalier, 'I ſuppoſe you are come to town to 'ſee the auguſt ceremony of the *Auto 'da Fé* *, which is to be performed 'to-morrow.' I anſwered in the affirmative; thinking it more prudent to let him believe that, than to give him

* The act of faith.

an

an opportunity of queſtioning me about my coming to Toledo. 'You will 'ſee,' he reſumed, 'one of the fineſt 'proceſſions that ever happened: there 'are, I am told, more than a hundred 'priſoners, among whom they reckon 'above ten who are to be burnt.'

Next morning, indeed, before ſunriſe, I heard all the bells of the city tolling; and this melancholy ſound was to advertiſe the people, that they were going to begin the *Auto da Fé*. Curious to ſee this ſolemnity, I put on my cloaths in a hurry, and repaired to the inquiſition. All along the ſtreets through which the proceſſion was to paſs, ſcaffolds were erected, upon one of which I hired a place. In a little time I perceived the Dominicans, who walked foremoſt, preceded by the banners of the inquiſition. Theſe good fathers were immediately followed by the wretched victims which were to be ſacrificed that day by the Holy Office. Theſe miſerable creatures walked one after another, with their heads and feet bare, each having a wax-taper in his hand, and a godfather * by his ſide. Some had large ſcapularies of yellow ſtuff, garniſhed with St. Andrew's croſſes painted red, and called *ſanbenito*; others wore *carochas*, which are high paper caps, made in the ſhape of a ſugar loaf, and covered with flames and diabolical figures.

As I looked attentively at theſe unfortunate people, with a compaſſion which I took care to conceal, that I might not ſuffer for it, I thought I recollected among thoſe who had their heads adorned with carochas, the reverend Father Hilary, and his companion Brother Ambroſe. They paſſed ſo near me that I could not be miſtaken. 'What do I ſee!' ſaid I to myſelf; 'Heaven, wearied with the 'diſorderly lives of theſe wretches, 'hath delivered them at laſt to the 'juſtice of the inquiſition!' So ſaying, I felt myſelf ſeized with horror; I trembled from head to foot; and my ſpirits were ſo diſordered, that I had almoſt ſwooned. The connection which I once had with theſe rogues, the adventure of Xelva, in ſhort, all the circumſtances of my correſpondence with them, preſented themſelves that moment to my fancy; and I thought I could never be thankful enough to God for having preſerved me from the ſcapulary and carochas.

When the ceremony was ended, I returned to the inn, trembling at the dreadful ſpectacle which I had beheld: but theſe afflicting images which diſturbed my imagination diſperſed inſenſibly: and now my whole ſtudy was to acquit myſelf handſomely of the commiſſion entruſted to my care. I waited impatiently for play time, that I might go to the theatre, judging that to be the moſt proper beginning of my work: and, as ſoon as the hour came, went thither, and ſat down by a knight of Alcantara; with whom entering into converſation, 'Signior,' ſaid I to him, 'may a ſtranger be ſo 'bold as to aſk you one queſtion?'—'Signior Cavalier,' anſwered he, very politely, 'I ſhall think it an honour.'—'I have heard the actors of Tole-'do,' I reſumed, 'very much extoll-'ed; pray, have I been miſinform-'ed?'—'No,' replied the knight; 'their company is not bad; nay, there 'are great players among them. You 'will ſee, among others, the fair Lu-'cretia, an actreſs of fourteen years 'of age, who will ſurprize you very 'much. I ſhall have no occaſion to 'point her out to you; when ſhe 'appears, you will eaſily diſtinguiſh 'her from the reſt.' I aſked if ſhe was to play that evening: and he told me ſhe would; obſerving, at the ſame time, that ſhe had a very ſhining part to act in the piece which was going to be repreſented.

The play began; and two actreſſes, who had neglected nothing which could contribute towards rendering them charming, appeared on the ſtage; but, in ſpite of the luſtre of their diamonds, I took neither the one nor the other for her whom I expected. At length Lucretia walked forward from the bottom of the ſtage; and her appearance was ſaluted by a long and general clapping of hands. 'Ah, there ſhe 'is!' ſaid I to myſelf: 'what a noble 'air! what grace! what fine eyes! 'O the divine creature!' I was actually very well pleaſed, or rather paſſion-

* People named by the inquiſitor, to accompany the priſoners in the *Auto da Fé*, and obliged to be anſwerable for them.

ately ſtruck with her perſon. On hearing her recite the firſt couplet, I found ſhe had nature, fire, an underſtanding above her age; and I joined my applauſe to that which ſhe willingly received from the whole audience, during the whole performance. 'Well,' ſaid the knight to me, 'you 'ſee how Lucretia is careſſed by the 'publick.'—'I am not at all ſurprized at it,' anſwered I. 'You 'would be leſs ſo ſtill,' ſaid he, 'if 'you had heard her ſing. She is a 'perfect ſyren. Woe be to thoſe who 'liſten! Her dancing is no leſs formidable: her ſteps, as dangerous as 'her voice, charm the eye, and force 'the heart to yield.'—'If that be the 'caſe,' cried I, 'it muſt be owned 'ſhe is a prodigy! What happy mortal has the pleaſure of ruining himſelf for ſuch an amiable creature!'

'She has no declared lover,' ſaid he, 'and even ſcandal has not as yet involved her in any private intrigue. 'Nevertheleſs,' added he, 'this may 'ſoon be the caſe; for Lucretia is 'under the conduct of her aunt Eſtella, who is certainly the moſt expert 'of all the actreſſes.' At the name of Eſtella, I interrupted the knight with precipitation, to aſk if that Eſtella was an actreſs of the Toledo company. 'She is one of the beſt of 'them,' ſaid he; 'ſhe has not acted 'to-day, and we have ſuffered by her 'abſence: ſhe uſually plays the part 'of the waiting-woman, which ſhe 'performs to admiration. Her action 'is full of ſpirit; perhaps too full: 'but it is an agreeable fault, which 'ought to be forgiven.' The knight told me wonders of this Eſtella; and, by the picture he drew of her perſon, I never doubted that it was Laura, that ſame Laura of whom I have ſpoken ſo much in my hiſtory, and whom I had left at Grenada.

However, to be more certain ſtill, after the play I went behind the ſcenes; and, caſting my eyes around, found her in the tyring-room, talking to ſome gentlemen, who, perhaps, regarded her only as the aunt of Lucretia. I advanced to ſalute Laura; but whether through whim, or in order to puniſh me for my precipitate departure from Grenada, ſhe pretended not to know me, and received my civilities ſo dryly, that I was a little diſconcerted. Inſtead of upbraiding her in a laughing humour for her cold behaviour towards me, I was fool enough to be nettled at it: I even retired haſtily, reſolving, in my paſſion, to return next day to Madrid. 'To be 'revenged of Laura,' ſaid I to myſelf, 'her niece ſhall not have the ho'nour of appearing before the king: 'for this purpoſe, I can give the mi'niſter ſuch a deſcription of Lucretia 'as I pleaſe; I have no more to do, 'but to tell him that ſhe dances with 'a bad grace, that ſhe has a ſqueaking voice; and, in ſhort, that her 'charms conſiſt in her youth only. I 'am ſure that his excellency, after that, 'will have no inclination to bring her 'to court.'

Such was the vengeance I meditated againſt Laura for her behaviour to me; but my reſentment did not laſt long: next day, juſt as I was about to depart, a page entered my chamber, and ſaid, 'Here is a letter for Signior 'de Santillane.'—'I am the perſon, 'my child,' anſwered I, taking the letter, which contained theſe words.

'FORGET the manner in which 'you was received laſt night in 'the tyring-room, and be ſo good as 'to follow the bearer.'

I immediately took the page for my conductor, who, when we were near the playhouſe, introduced me into a very handſome houſe, where I found Laura at her toilette in a very genteel apartment.

She got up to embrace me, ſaying, 'Signior Gil Blas, I know that you 'have no cauſe to be pleaſed with the 'reception you met with when you 'came to ſalute me in our tyring'room; an old friend, like you, had 'a right to expect more civil treat'ment: but I muſt tell you, for my 'excuſe, that I was then in a very 'bad humour. When you appeared, 'I was quite engroſſed by ſome ſcanda'lous diſcourſe which one of our gen'tlemen had uttered againſt my niece, 'whoſe honour is dearer to me than my 'own. Your ſudden retreat,' added ſhe, 'made me immediately recollect 'myſelf; and that moment I ordered 'my page to follow you to your lodg'ing, that I might to-day make a'mends for my fault.'—'That is al-

'ready

'ready done, my dear Laura,' ſaid I, 'let us talk no more of that matter: 'let us rather inform one another of 'what has happened to us ſince the 'unlucky day on which the dread of 'juſt chaſtiſement made me quit Gre-'nada with great precipitation. I 'left you, you may remember, in 'pretty great perplexity: pray, how 'did you extricate yourſelf? Had you 'not occaſion for all your addreſs to 'appeaſe your Portugueze lover?'—'Not at all,' replied Laura: 'don't 'you know, that in ſuch caſes the 'men are ſo weak, that they ſome-'times even ſpare the women the 'trouble to juſtify themſelves. I af-'firmed,' continued ſhe, 'to the Mar-'quis de Marialva, that thou waſt 'my brother. Pardon me, Mr. San-'tillane, if I ſpeak to you as fami-'liarly as heretofore: but I can't get 'rid of my old habits. I tell thee, 'then, that I brazened it out. "Don't "you ſee," ſaid I to the Portugueze 'nobleman, "that all this is the work "of jealouſy and rage? Narciſſa, my "comrade and rival, incenſed to ſee "me in quiet poſſeſſion of a heart of "which ſhe was baulked, has played "me this trick: ſhe has bribed the "under candle-ſnuffer; who, as the "miniſter of her reſentment, has the "impudence to ſay, that he has ſeen "me Arſenia's chamber-maid. No-"thing can be more falſe: the widow "of Don Antonio Cœlo always en-"tertained too noble ſentiments to "humble herſelf ſo low as to ſerve an "actreſs. Beſides, what proves the "falſity of the accuſation, and the "conſpiracy of my accuſers, is the "precipitate retreat of my brother: if "he was preſent, he might confound "their ſlander; but Narciſſa has, "doubtleſs, employed ſome new arti-"fice to make him diſappear." Though 'theſe reaſons,' purſued Laura, 'made 'but an indifferent apology, the Mar-'quis was ſo good as to be ſatisfied 'with it; and that good-natured 'nobleman continued to love me un-'til the day of his departure from 'Grenada, on his return to Portugal. 'Indeed, he did not ſtay long after 'thee: and the wife of Zapata had 'the pleaſure of ſeeing me loſe the 'lover of whom I had deprived her. 'After that I lived ſome years at 'Grenada; then a diviſion happening 'in our company, which is often the 'caſe, all the players ſeparated: ſome 'went to Seville, others to Cordova, 'and I came to Toledo, where I have 'been ten years, with my niece Lu-'cretia, whom thou muſt have ſeen 'act laſt night, ſince thou waſt at the 'play.'

I could not help laughing in this place; and Laura aſking the cauſe, 'Can't you gueſs?' ſaid I. 'You 'have neither brother nor ſiſter, and 'of conſequence cannot be Lucretia's 'aunt. Beſides, when I calculate the 'time which hath elapſed ſince our laſt 'ſeparation, and compare it with the 'age of your niece, I cannot help 'thinking that you are more nearly 'related.'

'I underſtand you, Mr. Gil Blas,' replied Don Antonio's widow, reddening; 'what a chronologiſt you 'are! it is impoſſible to make you be-'lieve it. Well then, my friend, Lu-'cretia is my daughter by the Mar-'quis de Marialva; ſhe is the fruit of 'our correſpondence; I can no longer 'conceal it from thee.'—'What a 'great effort you make, my princeſs,' ſaid I, 'in revealing that ſecret, after 'having imparted to me your adven-'tures with the ſteward of the hoſpital 'of Zamora. I muſt tell you, more-'over, Lucretia is a maid of ſuch ſin-'gular merit, that the publick can 'never be thankful enough to you 'for having made ſuch a preſent to it. 'It were to be wiſhed, that all your 'comrades had done the ſame.'—If ſome miſchievous reader, in this place, recollecting the private converſations which I had with Laura at Grenada, while I was ſecretary to the Marquis de Marialva, ſuſpects that I might have diſputed with that nobleman the honour of being Lucretia's father, it is a ſuſpicion the juſtice of which I muſt avow to my ſhame.—I recounted my principal adventures to Laura in my turn, and made her acquainted with my preſent ſituation. She liſtened to my narration ſo attentively as to ſhew that it was far from being indifferent to her; and when I had finiſhed it, 'Friend Santillane,' ſaid ſhe, 'I 'find you act a very conſiderable part 'on the theatre of the world; and 'you cannot imagine how much I am 'overjoyed at your good fortune. 'When I ſhall bring Lucretia to Ma-

'drid,

'drid, with an intention to introduce 'her into the prince's company, I 'flatter myſelf that ſhe will find a 'powerful protector in Signior de San-'tillane.'—'Never doubt that,' anſwered I; 'you may depend upon me: 'I will procure your daughter's ad-'mittance into the prince's company 'whenever you pleaſe: this is what I 'can promiſe, without preſuming too 'much upon my power.'—'I would 'take you at your word,' replied Laura, 'and ſet out for Madrid to-mor-'row, were I not reſtricted to this 'place by engagements with our com-'pany.'—'An order from court can 'break theſe ties;' ſaid I; 'and you 'ſhall receive one in leſs than eight 'days. I ſhall be pleaſed in taking 'Lucretia from the Toledans: ſuch 'an handſome actreſs is deſtined for 'courtiers, and properly belongs to 'us.'

Lucretia entered the room juſt as I had pronounced theſe words, and ſeemed ſo pretty and engaging, that I took her for the goddeſs Hebe. She had juſt riſen; and her natural beauty, ſhining without the help of art, preſented a raviſhing object to my view. 'Come, 'niece,' ſaid her mother to her, 'come, and thank this gentleman for 'his friendſhip: he is an old acquain-'tance of mine, who has great in-'tereſt at court, and intends to in-'troduce us both into the prince's 'company.' Theſe words ſeemed to give pleaſure to the dear girl, who made me a low curtſey, and ſaid, with an enchanting ſmile, 'I moſt humbly 'thank you for your obliging inten-'tion; but, in taking me from the 'people by whom I am beloved, are 'you ſure that I ſhall pleaſe the audi-'ence at Madrid? I ſhall, perhaps, 'loſe by the change. I remember 'to have heard my aunt ſay, that 'ſhe has ſeen actors careſſed in one 'place and hiſſed in another, and 'this gives me ſome concern; beware 'of expoſing me to the contempt and 'yourſelf to the reproaches of the 'court.'—'Fair Lucretia,' anſwered I, 'neither you nor I have reaſon to 'be apprehenſive of that: I rather fear 'that, by inflaming all that behold you, 'you will create ſome miſunderſtand-'ing among our grandees.'—'The fear 'of my niece,' ſaid Laura, 'is better 'founded than yours; but I hope they 'are both vain: if Lucretia cannot 'make a noiſe by her charms, in re-'compence, ſhe is no contemptible 'actreſs.'

Our converſation laſted ſome time longer; and I had reaſon to conclude, from every thing which Lucretia ſaid, that ſhe was a maid of a ſuperior genius. I then took my leave of the two ladies, aſſuring them that they ſhould ſoon have an order from court to repair to Madrid.

CHAP. II.

SANTILLANE GIVES AN ACCOUNT OF HIS COMMISSION TO THE MINISTER, WHO EMPLOYS HIM TO BRING LUCRETIA TO MADRID. THE ARRIVAL OF THAT ACTRESS, AND HER APPEARANCE AT COURT.

AT my return to Madrid, I found the count-duke very impatient to know the ſucceſs of my journey. 'Gil 'Blas,' ſaid he, 'haſt thou ſeen this 'fame actreſs? Is ſhe worth bringing 'to court?'—'My lord,' I replied, 'Fame, which uſually praiſes beauties 'more than they deſerve, has not ſaid 'enough in commendation of young 'Lucretia: ſhe is an admirable crea-'ture, both as to her perſon and ta-'lents.'—'Is it poſſible!' cried the miniſter, with an interior ſatisfaction which I read in his eyes, and which made me believe that he had ſent me to Toledo on his own account, 'is it 'poſſible that ſhe can be ſo amiable?' —'When you have ſeen her,' anſwered I, 'you will own, that no eulo-'gium can do juſtice to her charms.' —'Santillane,' ſaid his excellency, 'give me a faithful relation of thy 'journey; I ſhall be very glad to hear 'it.' To ſatisfy my maſter, I then recounted all, even the hiſtory of Laura inclufively. I told him, that this actreſs had Lucretia by the Marquis de Marialva, a Portugueze nobleman, who, ſtopping at Grenada on his travels, fell in love with her. In ſhort, when I had recounted to his grace every thing that happened between the two actreſſes and me, he ſaid, 'I am over-'joyed to hear that Lucretia is the 'daughter of a man of quality; that 'circumſtance intereſts me ſtill more

'in

'in her behalf; ſhe muſt be brought 'to town. But,' added he, 'continue as thou haſt begun; let not me 'appear in it: every thing muſt paſs 'in the name of Gil Blas de Santillane.'

I went and told Carnero, that his excellency deſired him to expedite an order, by which the king received into his company Eſtella and Lucretia, two actreſſes of Toledo. 'Aha, Signior 'de Santillane!' ſaid Carnero, with a ſatirical ſmile; 'yes, you ſhall be 'ſerved immediately, ſince, in all appearance, you intereſt yourſelf for 'theſe two ladies.' At the ſame time, he wrote an order with his own hand, and delivered it to me expedited; ſo that I ſent it inſtantly to Eſtella by the ſame lacquey who had attended me to Toledo. Eight days after, the mother and daughter arriving at Madrid, took lodgings hard by the prince's company, and their firſt care was to give me notice of it by a billet. I viſited them immediately, where, after a thouſand offers of ſervice on my ſide, and as many acknowledgments on theirs, I left them to prepare for their firſt publick appearance, which I wiſhed might be brilliant and ſucceſsful.

They advertiſed themſelves as two new actreſſes, whom the prince's company had received by an order from court; and they began with a comedy which they had often acted at Toledo with applauſe. In what part of the world are new ſights diſregarded? The playhouſe was that day filled with an extraordinary concourſe of ſpectators; and you may well imagine that I did not fail to be there. I ſuffered a little before the piece began; and, prepoſſeſſed as I was in favour of the talents both of mother and daughter, I trembled for them; ſo much was I intereſted in their ſucceſs. But ſcarce had they opened their mouths, when my fear was baniſhed by the applauſe which they received. Eſtella was looked upon as a conſummate comick actreſs, and Lucretia as a prodigy in tender parts. This laſt captivated all hearts. Some admired the beauty of her eyes, others were touched by the ſweetneſs of her voice; and every body, ſtruck with the graces and brilliancy of her youth, went away enchanted by her appearance.

The count-duke, being more intereſted than I imagined in the firſt eſſay of this actreſs, was at the play that evening; and I ſaw him go out about the end of the performance, ſeemingly very well ſatisfied with our two new players. Curious to know if he was really affected with their ſucceſs, I followed him home, and going into his cloſet juſt after him, 'Well, my 'lord,' ſaid I, 'is your excellency 'ſatisfied with young Marialva?'— 'My excellency,' anſwered he, ſmiling, 'would be very nice indeed, if 'I refuſed to join my vote to that of 'the publick. Yes, child, I am charmed with thy Lucretia, and I don't 'doubt that the king will be pleaſed 'when he ſees her.'

CHAP. III.

LUCRETIA MAKES A GREAT NOISE AT COURT, AND ACTS BEFORE THE KING, WHO FALLS IN LOVE WITH HER. THE CONSEQUENCE OF HIS PASSION.

THE appearance of two new actreſſes ſoon made a noiſe at court: the very next day it was ſpoke of at the king's levee. Some noblemen extolled young Lucretia in particular, and drew ſuch a beautiful picture of her, that the monarch was ſtruck with it: but, diſſembling the impreſſion which their diſcourſes made upon his heart, he ſeemed to take no notice of what they ſaid. Nevertheleſs, as ſoon as he found himſelf alone with the count-duke, he aſked who this actreſs was whom they praiſed ſo much. The miniſter anſwered, that ſhe was a young player of Toledo, who had made her firſt appearance the preceding night with great ſucceſs. 'She is called Lucre-'tia,' added he; 'a name very ſuit-'able to people of her profeſſion. She 'is an acquaintance of Santillane's, 'who ſpoke ſo much in her favour, 'that I thought proper to receive her 'into your majeſty's company.'

The king ſmiled when he heard my name mentioned, becauſe he remembered, perhaps, at that moment, that it was I who had made him acquainted with Catalina, and foreſaw that I ſhould do him the ſame ſervice on this occaſion. 'Count,' ſaid he to the miniſter, 'I will go to-morrow and ſee this

'Lucretia

'Lucretia act. Take care to adver-
'tiſe her of my intention.'

The count-duke having repeated this converſation to me, and informed me of the king's deſign, ſent me to impart it to our two actreſſes. 'I come,' ſaid I to Laura, who was the firſt I met, 'to tell you a piece of great 'news; you will, to-morrow, have 'among your ſpectators the ſovereign 'of this monarchy; this is what I am 'ordered by the miniſter to acquaint 'you with. I don't doubt that your 'daughter and you will do your ut-'moſt to deſerve the honour which 'the king intends you; but I adviſe 'you to chuſe a piece in which there 'is both dancing and muſick, that he 'may admire all the talents of Lu-'cretia together.' — 'We will take 'your advice,' replied Laura, 'and 'do all in our power to amuſe the 'prince.'—'He cannot fail of being 'pleaſed,' ſaid I, ſeeing Lucretia come in, in a diſhabille, which gave her more charms than the moſt ſuperb theatrical dreſs. 'He will be ſo much 'the more ſatisfied with your lovely 'niece, as he loves ſinging and dan-'cing above all other entertainments: 'who knows but he may be tempted 'to throw the handkerchief at her!' —'I don't at all wiſh,' replied Laura, 'that he may have any ſuch tempta-'tion; notwithſtanding his being a 'powerful monarch, he might find 'obſtacles to the accompliſhment of 'his deſires. Lucretia is virtuous, 'though bred behind the ſcenes, and 'whatever pleaſure ſhe may feel in 'ſeeing herſelf applauded on the ſtage, 'ſhe would much rather paſs for a 'modeſt girl than for a good actreſs.'

'Why ſhould my aunt,' ſaid young Marialva, joining in the converſation, 'form ſuch chimeras to fight with? I 'ſhall never be obliged to repulſe the 'ſighs of the king; the delicacy of his 'taſte will ſave him from the reproaches 'he would deſerve, if he could hum-'ble his attention to me.'——'But, 'charming Lucretia,' ſaid I, 'ſhould 'it happen that the prince would at-'tach himſelf to you, and chuſe you 'for his miſtreſs, would you be ſo 'cruel as to let him languiſh in your 'chains like an ordinary lover?'— 'Why not?' anſwered ſhe. 'Yes, 'doubtleſs: and though virtue were 'out of the queſtion, my vanity would 'exult much more in reſiſting than 'in yielding to his paſſion.' I was not a little aſtoniſhed to hear a pupil of Laura talk in this manner; and left the ladies; praiſing the laſt for having beſtowed ſuch good education on the other.

Next day the king, impatient to ſee Lucretia, went to the play. They acted a performance, mixed with ſongs and dances, in which our young actreſs ſhone very much. From the beginning to the end, I kept my eyes fixed on the monarch, and in his looks endeavoured to read his thoughts; but he baffled my penetration by an air of gravity which all along he affected to preſerve. I did not learn till next day what I was ſo curious to know. 'Santillane,' ſaid the miniſter to me, 'I have juſt left the king, who has 'ſpoke to me of Lucretia with ſo much 'vivacity, that I am convinced he is 'captivated by that young player; 'and, as I told him that thou waſt 'the occaſion of bringing her from 'Toledo, he ſaid he ſhould be glad 'to talk with thee in private on that 'ſubject. Go, inſtantly, and preſent 'thyſelf at his chamber-door, where 'there is an order already given to 'admit thee. Run, therefore, and bring 'me back, as ſoon as poſſible, an ac-'count of the converſation.'

I flew inſtantly to the palace, where I found the king alone, walking very faſt in expectation of my coming, and ſeemingly very much perplexed. He put ſeveral queſtions to me about Lucretia, whoſe hiſtory he obliged me to recount: he then aſked, if the little gentlewoman had never been engaged in any intrigue. I boldly aſſured him that ſhe had not, (though theſe ſorts of aſſurances are a little raſh!) and the prince ſeemed very glad to hear it. 'If that be the caſe,' ſaid he, 'I chuſe 'thee for my agent with Lucretia; 'and deſire, that by thy means ſhe 'may this evening learn her victory. 'Go, ſignify her conqueſt from me,' added he, putting into my hand a diamond necklace worth forty thouſand crowns; 'and tell her, that I deſire 'ſhe will accept of that preſent, until 'I give her more ſolid marks of my 'affection.'

Before I performed this commiſſion, I went back to the count-duke, and made a faithful report of what the king had

had ſaid: with this I imagined the miniſter would be more afflicted than rejoiced; for I believed (as I have already obſerved) that he himſelf had amorous views upon Lucretia, and would be chagrined to hear that his maſter was become his rival; but I was miſtaken. Far from ſeeming mortified at the news, it gave him ſo much joy, that, being unable to contain it, ſome words eſcaped him, which did not fall to the ground. 'Aha, Philip!' cried he; 'egad! I have you faſt. For once, you will be ſick of buſineſs.' This apoſtrophe diſcloſed the whole contrivance of the count-duke. I now perceived that the miniſter, being afraid of the king's applying himſelf to ſerious affairs, endeavoured to amuſe him with pleaſures more ſuitable to his humour. 'Santillane,' ſaid he, afterwards, 'loſe no time; make haſte, my friend, to go and execute the important order which thou haſt received, and which a great many noblemen at court would glory in performing. Conſider,' ſaid he, 'that thou haſt here no Count de Lemos to deprive thee of one half of the honour acquired in this ſervice: thou wilt have it entirely to thyſelf; and, moreover, enjoy all the fruits of it.'

Thus did his excellency gild the pill, which I ſwallowed down gently, though not without taſting the bitterneſs of it: for, ſince my impriſonment, I had been uſed to look upon things in a moral point of view, and did not think the poſt of Mercury in chief quite ſo honourable as it was called. However, though I was not vicious enough to perform it without remorſe, I had not virtue ſufficient to make me refuſe the employment. I therefore obeyed the king the more willingly, as I ſaw at the ſame time that my compliance would be agreeable to the miniſter, whom it was my ſole ſtudy to pleaſe. I thought proper to addreſs myſelf at firſt to Laura, to whom, in a private converſation, I diſcloſed my miſſion in a diſcreet manner; and towards the end of the diſcourſe, preſented the jewels; at ſight of which the lady, being unable to conceal her joy, gave a looſe to it. 'Signior Gil Blas,' cried ſhe, 'I ought not to conſtrain myſelf before my oldeſt and beſt friend. I ſhould be to blame in affecting a falſe ſeverity of morals, and making grimaces with you. Yes; you need not doubt it,' continued ſhe; 'I am overjoyed that my daughter has made ſuch a precious conqueſt, all the advantages of which I comprehend; but, between you and me, I am afraid that Lucretia will look upon them with a different eye: for, though a young actreſs, ſhe is ſo careful of her chaſtity, that ſhe has already rejected the addreſſes of two young noblemen, both amiable and rich. You may ſay, indeed, that theſe were not kings. True; and in all probability, the paſſion of a crowned head will ſhake the virtue of Lucretia. Nevertheleſs, I muſt tell you, that the thing is uncertain, and I declare that I will never force the inclinations of my daughter. If, far from thinking herſelf honoured by the tranſient affection of the king, ſhe ſhall regard that honour as infamous, let not that great prince be diſobliged if ſhe ſhall conceal herſelf from him. Return to-morrow,' added ſhe, 'and then I will tell you whether you muſt carry back to him a favourable anſwer, or his jewels.'

I did not at all doubt that Laura would exhort Lucretia to ſwerve from her duty, rather than remain in it, and I depended a good deal on that exhortation. Nevertheleſs, I learned with ſurprize next day, that Laura had as much difficulty in ſwaying her daughter to vice as other mothers have to form their's to virtue; and, which is ſtill more ſurprizing, Lucretia, after having granted ſome private interviews to the monarch, felt ſo much remorſe for having yielded to his deſires, that ſhe quitted the world all of a ſudden, and ſhut herſelf up in the monaſtery of the Incarnation, where ſhe ſoon fell ſick, and died of grief. Laura being inconſolable for the loſs of her daughter, whoſe death ſhe upbraided herſelf with, retired into the convent of the Female Penitents, there to mourn the pleaſures of her youth. The king was affected by the unexpected retreat of Lucretia; but being of a humour not to be long afflicted at any thing, conſoled himſelf by degrees for this event. As for the count-duke, although he did not ſeem very much touched at this incident,

it did not fail to give him a great deal of mortification; and this the reader will eaſily believe.

CHAP. IV.

SANTILLANE IS INVESTED BY THE MINISTER WITH A NEW EMPLOYMENT.

I Was alſo ſenſibly affected by the misfortune of Lucretia, and felt ſuch remorſe for having contributed to it, that, looking upon myſelf as an infamous wretch, in ſpite of the quality of the lover whoſe paſſion I had ſerved, I reſolved to abandon the caduceus for ever. I even expreſſed to the miniſter the reluctance I had to bear it, and begged he would employ me in ſomething elſe. 'Santillane,' ſaid he, 'I am charmed with thy delicacy; and, ſince thou art a man of 'ſuch honour, will give thee an occupation more ſuitable to thy virtue. 'This it is; liſten attentively to what 'I am going to impart.

'Some years before I was in favour,' continued he, 'chance one day preſented to my view a lady ſo handſome and well made, that I ordered 'her to be followed. I learned that 'ſhe was a Genoeſe, called Donna 'Margarita Spinola, who lived at 'Madrid on the revenue of her beauty, 'and that Don Franciſco de Valeaſar *, 'an alcade of the court, a rich old 'married man, ſpent a great deal of 'money upon the coquette. This report, which ought to have inſpired 'me with contempt for her, made me 'conceive a violent deſire of ſharing 'her favours with Valeaſar; and, to 'ſatisfy it, I had recourſe to a female 'go-between, who had the addreſs in 'a little time to procure for me a private interview with the Genoeſe; and 'that was followed by many more, 'ſo that my rival and I were equally 'well treated for our preſents. Perhaps, too, ſhe had other gallants as 'happy as we were.

'Be that as it will, Margarita, in 'receiving ſuch confuſed homage, 'inſenſibly became pregnant, and 'brought forth a ſon, the honour of 'whom ſhe beſtowed on each of her 'lovers in particular; but not one of 'them being in conſcience able to boaſt 'himſelf the father of that child, it 'was diſowned by them all; ſo that 'the Genoeſe was obliged to maintain it with the fruit of her intrigues: 'this ſhe did for eighteen years, at 'the end of which term dying, ſhe 'has left her ſon without fortune, and, 'which is worſe, without education.

'This,' purſued his grace, 'is the 'ſecret I had to impart, and I will 'now inform thee of the great deſign 'which I have projected. I will bring 'this unfortunate child from obſcurity; and, making him paſs from one 'extreme to another, raiſe him to honours, and own him for my ſon.'

At this extravagant project it was impoſſible for me to hold my tongue. 'How, my lord!' cried I; 'can your 'excellency have taken ſuch a ſtrange 'reſolution; pardon me for uſing that 'term, which hath eſcaped my zeal.' —'Thou wilt ſay that I am very prudent,' he replied, with precipitation, 'when I have told thee the reaſons 'that have determined me to take it. 'I don't deſire that my collaterals 'ſhould be my heirs. Thou wilt ſay, 'that I am not as yet of ſuch an advanced age as to make me deſpair of 'having children by my Lady Olivarez. But every one knows himſelf 'beſt. Let it ſuffice to tell thee, that 'there is no ſecret in chymiſtry which 'I have not tried in vain to become 'a father. Therefore, ſince Fortune, 'ſupplying the defects of Nature, preſents a child to me, whoſe true father perhaps I am, I am reſolved to 'adopt him.' When I ſaw the miniſter bent on this adoption, I ceaſed to oppoſe it, knowing him to be a man capable of committing a fooliſh action rather than ſwerve from his own opinion. 'The ſole buſineſs now,' added he, 'is to beſtow education upon 'Don Henry Philip de Guzman, (for 'this name I intend he ſhall bear)

* Don Franciſco de Valeaſar actually married this lady when ſhe was big with child, and adopted the boy, whom he educated and acknowledged as his own ſon during the ſpace of thirty-one years; at the expiration of which the count-duke, finding himſelf without heirs-male, had him legitimated, and created Marquis de Mayenza.

'until

'until he ſhall be in a condition to 'poſſeſs the dignities that await him. 'Thou, my dear Santillane, art the 'perſon whom I chuſe to be his tutor. 'I confide in thy underſtanding and 'attachment to me for thy care in re-'gulating his family, in giving him 'all ſorts of maſters; in a word, of 'making him an accompliſhed cava-'lier.' I would have refuſed this employment, repreſenting to the count-duke, that I was very ill qualified to educate young noblemen, having never practiſed that buſineſs, which required more knowledge and merit than I poſſeſſed. But he interrupted me, and ſhut my mouth, by ſaying, that he was abſolutely reſolved to make me governor to this adopted ſon, whom he deſtined for the firſt offices of the monarchy. I prepared myſelf, therefore, to fill this place for the ſatisfaction of his grace, who, to reward my compliance, encreaſed my ſmall revenue with a penſion of a thouſand crowns, which he procured, or rather gave me, on the commandery of Mamdra.

CHAP. V.

THE SON OF THE GENOESE IS OWNED BY AN AUTHENTICK ACT, AND CALLED DON HENRY PHILIP DE GUZMAN. SANTILLANE FORMS THE FAMILY OF THAT YOUNG NOBLEMAN, AND HIRES ALL SORTS OF MASTERS FOR HIM.

THE count-duke in a little time actually owned the ſon of Donna Margarita Spinola, and the deed was executed with the conſent and inclination of the king. Don Henry Philip de Guzman (for that was the name given to this child of many fathers) was declared ſole heir of the Count d'Olivarez, and of the duchy of San Lucar. The miniſter, that nobody might be ignorant of this event, ordered Carnero to communicate the declaration to the ambaſſadors and grandees of Spain, who were not a little ſurprized at his conduct. The wits of Madrid had a fund of mirth from it a long time, and the ſatirical poets did not neglect ſuch a fair occaſion of ſhedding the gall of their pens.

When I aſked where this gentleman was whom his grace intended to entruſt to my care, 'He is in this city,' he replied, 'under the direction of an 'aunt, from whom I will take him 'as ſoon as thou ſhalt have prepared a 'houſe for him.' This was ſoon performed. I took a houſe, which I cauſed to be magnificently furniſhed; hired pages, a porter, and footman; and, with the aſſiſtance of Caporis, filled up the places of his officers. When I had compleated his attendants, I went and advertiſed his excellency, who immediately ſent for his equivocal heir and new ſhoot from the trunk of the Guzmans, and I found him a tall young fellow of an agreeable perſon. 'Don Henry,' ſaid his grace to him, pointing with his finger to me, 'this 'gentleman is the guide whom I have 'choſen to conduct you in the career 'of life. I have the greateſt confi-'dence in him, and give him an ab-'ſolute power over you.—Yes, San-'tillane,' ſaid he, turning to me, 'I 'abandon him entirely to your care, 'and don't doubt that you will give 'a good account of him.' To this diſcourſe the miniſter joined others, exhorting the young man to ſubmit to my directions; after which I conducted Don Henry to his houſe, where when we arrived, I made all his domeſticks paſs in review before him, ſignifying the office of each. He did not ſeem confounded at the change of his condition; and, accommodating himſelf to the deference and officious reſpect that was ſhewn to him, he ſeemed to have been always that which he was now become by chance. He did not want capacity, but was wholly illiterate, being ſcarce able to read or write. I furniſhed him with a preceptor to teach him the elements of the Latin tongue, and hired for him maſters of geography, hiſtory, and fencing. You may well believe, that I did not forget a dancing-maſter: I was only embarraſſed in the choice; for at that time there was a great number famous in that profeſſion at Madrid, and I did not know to whom I ought to give the preference. While I was in this perplexity, a man richly dreſſed came into the court, and I being told that he wanted to ſpeak with me, went to him, imagining that he was at leaſt a knight of St. Jago or Alcantara. When I aſked his com-

mands, 'Signior de Santillane,' anſwered he, after having made ſeveral bows, which ſmelled ſtrongly of his profeſſion, 'underſtanding that your 'worſhip is the perſon who chuſes 'maſters for Signior Don Henry, I 'am come to offer my ſervice; my 'name is Martin Ligero; and I have, '(thank Heaven!) ſome reputation. 'It is not my cuſtom to come and ſo-'licit for ſcholars; that is the pro-'vince of little obſcure dancing-ma-'ſters. I uſually wait until I am ſent 'for; but as I have taught the Duke 'de Medina Sidonia, Don Lewis de 'Haro, and ſome other noblemen of 'the family of Guzman, to which I 'am as it were a ſervant born, I 'thought it my duty to anticipate your 'meſſage.'—'I find by your diſcourſe,' ſaid I, 'that you are the man we 'want. How much do you take per 'month?'—'Four double piſtoles,' anſwered he, 'is the current price, and 'I give but two leſſons per week.'—'Four doubloons a month!' cried I, 'that is a great deal.'—'How! a great 'deal!' replied he, with an air of aſtoniſhment; 'you would give a piſ-'tole a-month to a maſter of philo-'ſophy.'

There was no reſiſting ſuch a pleaſant reply, at which I laughed heartily, and aſked Signior Ligero, if he really thought a man of his profeſſion preferable to a maſter of philoſophy. 'Doubtleſs,' ſaid he; 'we are of much 'greater uſe than thoſe gentlemen. 'What is a man before he has paſſed 'through our hands? what but an ill-'licked cub? but our leſſons mould 'him by little and little into a due 'form. In a word, we teach him to 'move gracefully, giving him atti-'tudes and airs of dignity and impor-'tance.'

I yielded to the arguments of this dancing-maſter, whom I hired for Don Henry at the rate of four double piſtoles a month, ſince that was the price of great maſters of his art.

CHAP. VI.

SCIPIO RETURNING FROM NEW-SPAIN, GIL BLAS SETTLES HIM IN THE SERVICE OF DON HENRY. THE STUDIES OF THAT YOUNG NOBLEMAN, WITH THE HONOURS WHICH WERE CONFERRED UPON HIM, AND AN ACCOUNT OF THE LADY TO WHOM HE WAS MARRIED. GIL BLAS BECOMES NOBLE IN SPITE OF HIMSELF.

I Had not as yet compleated the half of Don Henry's family, when Scipio returned from Mexico. I aſked him if he was ſatisfied with his voyage, and he anſwered, 'I have reaſon to be ſo; 'ſince, with three thouſand ducats in 'ſpecie, I have brought over twice as 'much in merchandize of the con-'ſumption of this country.'—'I con-'gratulate thee, my child,' I replied. 'Thy fortune is now begun; and it 'is in thy power to compleat it, by 'returning to the Indies next year: 'or, if thou preferreſt an agreeable 'poſt at Madrid to the trouble of go-'ing ſo far to amaſs wealth, thou haſt 'nothing to do but to ſpeak; I have 'one at thy ſervice.'—'Egad!' ſaid the ſon of Coſcolina, 'there is no room 'for heſitation. I would much rather 'execute a good employment near you, 'than expoſe myſelf anew to the pe-'rils of a long voyage. Pray, maſter, 'explain yourſelf; what poſt do you 'intend for your humble ſervant?'

For his better information, I recounted to him the ſtory of the young nobleman whom the count-duke had introduced into the family of Guzman; and after having told him, that the miniſter had choſen me governor to Don Henry, I promiſed to make him valet de chambre to that adopted ſon. Scipio, who aſked no better, willingly accepted the poſt, and acquitted himſelf in it ſo well, that in leſs than three or four days he acquired the confidence and friendſhip of his new maſter.

I imagined that the pedagogues whom I had choſen to teach the ſon of the Genoeſe, would find their Latin thrown away, believing one at his age undiſciplinable. But I was much miſtaken. He eaſily comprehended and retained all that was ſhewn to him, and his maſters were very well ſatisfied with his capacity. I ran eagerly to impart this piece of news to the duke, who received it with exceſſive joy. 'Santillane,' cried he, tranſported, 'I am raviſhed to hear that Don 'Henry has ſuch a memory and pene-'tration! I perceive my own blood 'in him; and what convinces me of 'his

'his being my ſon is, that I feel as 'much affection for him, as if he had 'been born by my Lady Olivarez. 'Thou ſeeſt by this, my friend, that 'nature declares itſelf.' I was not fool enough to tell his grace my ſentiments of the matter; but, reſpecting his weakneſs, left him to enjoy the pleaſure (whether true or falſe) of believing himſelf the father of Don Henry.

Although all the Guzmans entertained a mortal hatred to this young nobleman of freſh date, they diſſembled it out of policy; nay, ſome of them affected to court his friendſhip; he was viſited by the ambaſſadors and grandees who were then at Madrid, and honoured by them as much as if he had been a legitimate ſon of the count-duke. This miniſter, overjoyed to ſee ſuch incenſe offered to his idol, ſoon decked him with dignities. He began by aſking of the king the croſs of Alcantara, with a commandery of ten thouſand crowns, for Don Henry. In a little time after he was made gentleman of the bed-chamber. Then, reſolving to marry him to a lady of the moſt noble family of Spain, he caſt his eyes upon Donna Juana Velaſco, daughter to the Duke of Caſtile, and had authority enough to accompliſh the marriage, in ſpite of that duke and all his relations.

A few days before the marriage, his grace, having ſent for me, put ſome papers into my hand, ſaying, 'Hold, 'Gil Blas, here are letters of nobility, which I have ordered to be expedited for thee.'—'My lord,' anſwered I, ſurprized at his words, 'your 'excellency knows that I am the ſon 'of a poor duenna and ſquire; ſo that, 'in my opinion, the nobility would 'be prophaned by my aſſociation; and 'it is, of all the favours which his 'majeſty could beſtow, that which I 'deſerve and deſire the leaſt.'—'Thy 'birth,' replied the miniſter, 'is an 'objection that is eaſily removed: 'thou haſt been employed in ſtate affairs, both under the Duke of Lerma's miniſtry and mine: beſides,' added he, with a ſmile, 'haſt thou 'not done the monarch ſome ſervice 'which deſerves a recompence? In a 'word, Santillane, thou art not unworthy of the honour which I have 'procured for thee. Moreover, the 'rank which thou holdeſt with regard 'to my ſon, requires that thou ſhouldſt 'be noble; and it is on that account 'that I have obtained the patent.'—'I yield, my lord,' I replied, 'ſince 'your excellency inſiſts upon my compliance.' So ſaying, I went away with my patent in my pocket.

'I am now a gentleman,' ſaid I to myſelf, when I had got into the ſtreet, 'ennobled, without being obliged to 'my parents for my quality. I may, 'when I pleaſe, be called Don Gil 'Blas; and if any one of my acquaintance ſhall take it in his head 'to laugh in my face when he calls me 'ſo, I will ſhew my patent. But let 'us read it,' continued I, taking it out of my pocket, 'and ſee in what 'manner my original meanneſs is waſhed away.' I therefore peruſed the paper, the ſubſtance of which was, that the king, to reward the zeal which I had manifeſted on more than one occaſion for his ſervice and the good of the ſtate, had thought proper to gratify my attachment with letters of nobility. I will venture to ſay, in my own praiſe, that they did not inſpire me with the leaſt pride. Having the meanneſs of my extraction always before my eyes, this honour humbled inſtead of making me vain; therefore I determined to lock up my patent in a drawer, and never boaſt of it's being in my poſſeſſion.

CHAP. VII.

GIL BLAS MEETS FABRICIO AGAIN BY ACCIDENT. THE LAST CONVERSATION THAT HAPPENED BETWEEN THEM, AND THE IMPORTANT ADVICE WHICH NUNNEZ GAVE TO SANTILLANE.

THE Aſturian poet (as muſt have been obſerved by the reader) willingly neglected me; and my occupations did not permit me to viſit him. I had not ſeen him ſince the day of the diſſertation on the Iphigenia of Euripides, when chance again threw him in my way near the Gate of the Sun. He was coming out of a printing-houſe, and I accoſted him, ſaying, 'Aha, Mr. Nunnez! you have been 'at the printer's; that ſeems to threaten 'the publick with a new work of

'your

'your compoſition.'—'That is what indeed it may expect,' anſwered he. 'I have actually in the preſs a pamphlet which will make ſome noiſe in the republick of letters.'—'I don't doubt the merit of thy production,' I replied, 'but am amazed at thy compoſing pamphlets, which in my opinion are trifles that do no great honour to a man of genius.'—'I know it very well,' ſaid Fabricio, 'and am not ignorant that none but thoſe who read every thing amuſe themſelves with pamphlets. However, this one has eſcaped me, which I own is the child of neceſſity. Hunger, thou knoweſt, brings the wolf out of the wood.'

'How!' cried I; 'does the author of the Count de Saldagne talk in this manner? a man who has two thouſand crowns a-year!'—'Softly, friend,' ſaid Nunnez to me; 'I am no longer that happy poet who enjoyed a well-paid penſion. The affairs of the Treaſurer Don Bertrand are diſordered all of a ſudden. He has fingered and ſquandered away the king's money; all his effects are ſeized, and my penſion is gone to the devil.'—'That is a melancholy affair,' I reſumed; 'but haſt thou no hope remaining from that quarter?'—'Not the leaſt,' ſaid he. 'Signior Gomez de Ribero, as poor as his poet, is gone to the bottom, and will never, it is ſaid, get his head above water again.'

'If that be the caſe, my child,' anſwered I; 'I muſt find out ſome poſt to conſole thee for the loſs of thy penſion.'—'I will ſpare thee that trouble,' cried he. If thou wouldſt offer me an employment in the miniſter's offices worth three thouſand crowns yearly, I would refuſe it. The buſineſs of clerks will not agree with the humour of a foſter-child of the Muſes: I muſt enjoy my literary amuſements. What ſhall I ſay to thee! I am born to live and die a poet, and my deſtiny muſt be fulfilled.

'But don't imagine,' continued he, 'that we are very unhappy; beſides that we live in perfect independence, we are boys without care. People think that we often dine with Democritus, and there they are miſtaken. There is not one of my fraternity, not even excepting the makers of almanacks, who is not welcome to ſome good table. As for my part, there are two families where I am always received with pleaſure. I have two covers laid for me every day, one at the houſe of a fat director of the farms, to whom I have dedicated a romance; and the other at the houſe of a rich citizen, who has the diſeaſe of being thought to entertain wits every day at his table; luckily he is not very delicate in his choice, and the city furniſhes him with great plenty.'

'I no longer pity thee then,' ſaid I to the Aſturian poet, 'ſince thou art ſatisfied with thy condition: though I proteſt to thee anew, that thou haſt always in Gil Blas a friend who is proof againſt thy neglect and indifference; if thou haſt occaſion for my purſe, come boldly to me; and let not a ſilly ſhame deprive thee of an infallible ſuccour, and rob me of the pleaſure of obliging thee.'

'By that generous ſentiment,' cried Nunnez; 'I recollect my friend Santillane; I return a thouſand thanks for thy kind offer, and out of gratitude will give thee a wholeſome advice. While the count-duke continues in power, and thou art in poſſeſſion of his favour, profit by the opportunity; make haſte to enrich thyſelf; for I am told he begins to totter.' I aſked Fabricio if he had that intelligence on good authority; and he anſwered, 'I have it from a knight of Calatrava, who has a very ſingular talent in diſcovering the moſt hidden ſecrets; he is looked upon as an oracle, and this is what I heard him ſay yeſterday. The count-duke has a great many enemies, who are all united to ruin him; he depends too much on the aſcendancy which he has over the king; that monarch, it is reported, begins to liſten to the complaints which have already reached his ears.' I thanked Nunnez for his information, of which I took little notice, but went home, perſuaded that my maſter's authority was immoveable, and conſidering him as one of thoſe old oaks which are rooted in a foreſt, and which no ſtorms can overthrow.

CHAP.

CHAP. VIII.

GIL BLAS IS CONVINCED OF THE TRUTH OF FABRICIO'S INTELLIGENCE. THE KING GOES TO SARAGOSSA.

NEVERTHELESS, what the Aſturian poet had told me was not without foundation. There was in the palace a ſecret confederacy formed againſt the count-duke, and the queen was ſaid to be at the head of it; but none of the meaſures which they took to diſplace the miniſter tranſpired: nay, a whole year paſſed before I perceived that his favour had received the leaſt ſhock.

But the revolt of the Catalonians, ſupported by France, and the bad ſucceſs of the war againſt theſe rebels, excited the murmurs of the people, who complained of the government. Theſe complaints occaſioned a council to be held in preſence of the king, who deſired the Marquis de Grana, the emperor's ambaſſador at the court of Spain, to be there; the ſubject of their deliberation being, whether it was moſt proper for the king to ſtay in Caſtile, or go and ſhew himſelf to his troops in Arragon. The count-duke, who was averſe to the prince's departure for the army, ſpoke firſt: he repreſented, that it was better for his majeſty to remain in the center of his dominions; and ſupported his opinion with all the reaſons which his eloquence could afford. He had no ſooner concluded his ſpeech, than his advice was unanimouſly followed by every body in council, except the Marquis de Grana; who, liſtening to nothing but his zeal for the houſe of Auſtria, and giving way to the frankneſs of his nation, oppoſed the ſentiment of the prime-miniſter, and ſupported the contrary opinion with ſuch force, that the king was ſtruck with the ſolidity of his arguments, embraced his opinion, though it was oppoſite to that of the whole council, and fixed the day of his departure for the army.

This was the firſt time that ever his majeſty durſt think otherwiſe than his favourite; who, looking upon this novelty as a bloody affront, was very much mortified. When the miniſter was going to retire into his cloſet, to bite upon the bridle at liberty, he perceived me, and taking me in along with him, recounted what had paſſed at council with great agitation: then, like a man who could not recollect himſelf from his ſurprize, 'Yes, Santillane,' continued he, 'the king, who for theſe twenty years 'paſt hath ſpoke with my mouth, and 'ſeen through my eyes, now prefers 'the opinion of Grana to mine; and 'in what manner too? loading the am'baſſador with eulogiums, and, in par'ticular, praiſing his zeal for the houſe 'of Auſtria, as if that German loved it 'better than I do!

'By this it is eaſy to judge,' purſued the miniſter, 'that there is a party form'ed againſt me, and that the queen is 'at the head of it.'—'Why, my lord,' ſaid I, 'ſhould you be uneaſy with that 'conjecture? Has not the queen, for 'more than twelve years, been uſed to 'ſee you at the helm; and the king 'been in a long habit of not conſulting 'her? As for the Marquis of Grana, 'the monarch, perhaps, choſe his opi'nion out of deſire to ſee his army, and 'make a campaign.'—'That is not the 'caſe,' ſaid the count-duke; 'ſay, ra'ther, my enemies hope that the king, 'being among his troops, will always 'be ſurrounded by the noblemen who 'will attend him; and that more than 'one will be found ſo much diſguſted 'at me, as to ſpeak to the prejudice of 'my adminiſtration: but they are miſ'taken,' added he; 'I will make the 'prince inacceſſible to them all during 'the journey.' This he actually performed, in a manner that deſerves to be related.

The day of the king's departure being arrived, that monarch, after having entruſted the queen with the care of the government in his abſence, ſet out for Saragoſſa; but, in his way, paſſing by Aranjuez *, was ſo delighted with the place, that he ſtaid there almoſt three weeks:

* Aranjuez, is a royal palace in New Caſtile, ſituated near the rivers of Tajo and Garama, in a large plain ſurrounded by hills and foreſts, through which are many ſpacious avenues. The entrance to this palace is over two painted wooden bridges, upon the aforeſaid rivers, which join a little below the houſe. Here is a delightful garden; and, in a large ſquare paved with marble, a ſtatue in braſs of Charles the Fifth, armed cap-a-pée, trampling upon Hereſy, repreſented by four arch-hereticks.

weeks: from thence the miniſter carried him to Cuença, where he amuſed him ſtill longer by various diverſions. Then the pleaſures of the chace detained him at Molina of Arragon; after which he was conducted to Saragoſſa.

His army being not far from thence, he appeared for going to it; but the count-duke altered his inclination, by making him believe that he would be in danger of being taken by the French, who were maſters of the plain of Monçon: ſo that the king, being afraid of the peril which he had no cauſe to fear, took the reſolution of remaining ſhut up at home as in a priſon. The miniſter, taking the advantage of his terror, and under pretence of watching for his ſafety, guarded him, as it were, from the ſight of every body: and the grandees, who had been at a vaſt expence to put themſelves in a condition to follow their ſovereign, had not even the ſatisfaction of obtaining one private audience. Philip, at length, tired of being ill-lodged at Saragoſſa, of paſſing his time ſtill worſe, or, if you pleaſe, of being priſoner, returned in a little time to Madrid. Thus this monarch finiſhed his campaign, leaving to the Marquis de los Veles, general of his troops, the care of maintaining the honour of the Spaniſh arms.

CHAP. IX.

THE REVOLUTION OF PORTUGAL, AND THE DISGRACE OF THE COUNT-DUKE.

A Few days after the king's return, a very diſagreeable piece of news ſpread all over Madrid. It was reported that the Portugueze, looking upon the revolt of the Catalonians as a fair occaſion offered to them by fortune for ſhaking off the Spaniſh yoke, had taken up arms, and choſen the Duke of Braganza for their king; that they were reſolved to maintain him on the throne, and were confident of ſucceſs; Spain having at that time on her hands enemies in Germany, Italy, Flanders, and Catalonia: indeed they could not have found a more favourable conjuncture for freeing themſelves from a dominion which they deteſted*.

What is very ſingular is, that the count-duke, while both court and city ſeemed to be ſtruck with conſternation at the news, wanted to joke with the king at the expence of the Duke of Braganza: but Philip, far from being pleaſed with his raillery, aſſumed a very grave air, which diſconcerted him, and made him foreſee his diſgrace. He no longer doubted his own fall, when he underſtood that the queen had openly declared herſelf againſt him, and loudly accuſed him of having, by his bad adminiſtration, occaſioned the revolt of Portugal. The greateſt part of the grandees, eſpecially thoſe who had been at Saragoſſa, no ſooner perceived that a tempeſt was brewing over the head of the count-duke, than they joined the queen; and what gave the laſt ſtroke to his favour was, the arrival of the Ducheſs-dowager of Mantua, formerly governeſs of Portugal. This lady, on her return from Liſbon to Madrid, plainly demonſtrated to the king, that the revolution of that kingdom happened through the fault of the prime-miniſter.

The diſcourſe of this princeſs made a great impreſſion on the mind of the monarch; who, being at length rouzed from his infatuation for his favourite, ſtripped him of all the affection which he had entertained for him. When the miniſter was informed that the king liſtened to his enemies, he wrote a letter to him, aſking leave to reſign his employment, and remove from court, ſince people were ſo unjuſt as to impute to him all the misfortunes which had happened to the kingdom during the courſe of his adminiſtration. He thought that this letter would have a great effect, and that the prince ſtill preſerved ſo much friendſhip for him as to detain him at court; but all the anſwer which his majeſty returned, was the permiſſion that he deſired, with leave to retire whitherſoever he would.

Theſe words, written by the king's

* This revolution, which happened in the year 1640, was conducted with ſuch ſurprizing ſecreſy (though the deſign was known to more than two hundred perſons a whole year before) that the Duke of Braganza was declared king, and the Spaniſh yoke ſhook off, in one day, through all the Portugueze dominions in Europe, Aſia, Africa, and America.

own

own hand, were a thunderbolt to his grace, who by no means expected ſuch a reply; but, though he was very much confounded, he affected an air of conſtancy, and aſked what I would do were I in his place. 'I would ſoon take 'my reſolution,' ſaid I; 'I would 'abandon the court, and paſs the reſt 'of my days in peace at ſome one of 'my eſtates in the country.'—'That 'is a wholeſome advice,' replied my maſter; 'and I am fully reſolved to 'finiſh my career at Loeches, after I 'ſhall have once more converſed with 'the king; for I want to demonſtrate 'to him, that I have done all that hu-'man prudence could ſuggeſt to ſu-'ſtain the weighty burden with which 'I was loaded; and that it was im-'poſſible for me to prevent the melan-'choly events laid at my door; being 'no more to blame than a ſkilful pilot, 'who, in ſpite of all he can do, ſees 'his veſſel toſſed about by the waves 'and winds.' The miniſter ſtill flattered himſelf, that, by ſpeaking to the prince, he might adjuſt matters, and regain the ground which he had loſt; but he never could procure an audience; and, beſides, one was ſent to demand the key of the door by which he uſed to enter when he pleaſed into his majeſty's apartment. Concluding, then, that there were no farther hopes for him, he determined in good earneſt to retire. He examined his papers, a great quantity of which he very prudently committed to the flames; then naming the officers of his houſhold and valets who he intended ſhould follow him, he gave orders for his departure, which was fixed for next day. As he was afraid of being inſulted by the populace in coming out of the palace, he ſlipped away early in the morning by the kitchen-door, and getting into a ſorry coach, with his confeſſor and me, ſafely proceeded for Loeches, a village belonging to him, where his lady had built a magnificent convent of nuns of the Dominican order. Thither he repaired in leſs than four hours, and all his attendants arrived ſoon after.

CHAP. X.

THE ANXIETY AND CARES WHICH AT FIRST DISTURBED THE REPOSE OF THE COUNT-DUKE, AND THE HAPPY TRANQUILLITY BY WHICH THEY WERE SUCCEEDED. THE OCCUPATIONS OF THE MINISTER IN HIS RETREAT.

MADAM d'Olivarez let her huſband ſet out for Loeches, and ſtaid a few days after him at court, with a deſign to try if, by her tears and entreaties, ſhe could not effect his being recalled: but in vain did ſhe proſtrate herſelf before their majeſties; the king had no regard to her remonſtrances, though artfully prepared; and the queen, who hated her mortally, beheld her tears with pleaſure. The miniſter's wife was not repulſed for all that: ſhe humbled herſelf ſo far as to implore the good offices of the queen's ladies; but the fruit which ſhe reaped from her meanneſs was to perceive that it excited contempt rather than compaſſion. Vexed at having taken ſuch humbling ſteps to no purpoſe, ſhe went and joined her huſband, to grieve with him for the loſs of a place, which, under a reign like that of Philip the Fourth, was perhaps the firſt of the monarchy.

The lady's report of the condition in which ſhe left Madrid, redoubled the affliction of the count-duke: 'Your 'enemies,' ſaid ſhe weeping, 'the 'Duke de Medina Cœli, and the other 'grandees who hate you, inceſſantly 'praiſe the king for having deprived 'you of the miniſtry; and the people 'celebrate your diſgrace with an in-'ſolence of joy, as if the end of the 'national misfortunes was attached to 'that of your adminiſtration.'

'Madam,' ſaid my maſter to her, 'follow my example, and ſtifle your 'ſorrow; we muſt yield to the tem-'peſt which we cannot divert. I 'thought, indeed, that I could have 'perpetuated my favour even to the 'end of my life; the ordinary illuſion 'of miniſters and favourites, who for-'get that their fate depends upon their 'ſovereign. Has not the Duke of 'Lerma been deceived as well as I, 'though he imagined that his purple 'was the ſure guaranty of the eternal 'duration of his authority!'

In this manner did the count-duke exhort his ſpouſe to arm herſelf with patience; while he himſelf was in an agitation, which was daily encreaſed by the diſpatches which he received

from Don Henry, who, having remained at court to obſerve, took care to inform him exactly of every thing that happened: it was Scipio that brought the letters from that young nobleman, whom he ſtill ſerved, I having quitted him on his marriage with Donna Juana. The diſpatches of this adopted ſon were always filled with bad news, and unhappily no others were expected from him. Sometimes he wrote, that the grandees, not contented with rejoicing publickly at the retreat of the count-duke, were again re-united to turn out all his creatures from the poſts and employments which they poſſeſſed, to replace them with his enemies; another time, he obſerved, that Don Lewis de Haro began to come into favour, and would, in all probability, be made prime-miniſter. Of all the diſagreeable news which my maſter received, that which ſeemed to affect him moſt, was the change made in the vice-royalty of Naples, which the court, ſolely to mortify him, took from the Duke de Medina de las Torres, whom he loved, and gave it to the Admiral of Caſtile, whom he had always hated.

I may venture to ſay, that during three months his grace felt nothing in his ſolitude but trouble and chagrin: but his confeſſor, who was a Dominican friar, and, with the moſt ſolid piety, poſſeſſed a manly eloquence, had power enough to conſole him. By means of repreſenting with energy, that he ought to bend his thoughts entirely to his own ſalvation, he had, with the help of grace, the good fortune to detach his mind from the court. His excellency would no longer hear any news from Madrid, his whole care being now engroſſed in preparing for his latter end. Madam d'Olivarez, alſo, making a good uſe of her retreat, met with a conſolation prepared by Providence in the convent which ſhe had founded. There were among the nuns ſome holy maidens, whoſe converſation, full of balm, inſenſibly ſweetened the bitterneſs of her life. In proportion as my maſter turned his thoughts from worldly affairs, he became more and more tranquil; and in this manner regulated the day. He ſpent almoſt the whole morning in hearing maſs in the church of the convent, then returned to dinner; after which he amuſed himſelf about two hours, in playing at all ſorts of games with me and ſome other of his moſt affectionate domeſticks; then uſually retired by himſelf into his cloſet, where he remained till ſun-ſet; at which time he took a turn in his garden, or an airing in his coach, to the neighbourhood of his caſtle, accompanied ſometimes by his confeſſor, and ſometimes by me.

One day, being alone with him, and admiring the ſerenity of his countenance, I took the liberty to ſay, 'My 'lord, allow me to expreſs my joy: 'from the air of ſatisfaction in your 'looks, I conclude that your excellency begins to be accuſtomed to re'tirement.'—'I am already quite fa'miliarized to it,' anſwered he: 'and 'though I have been a long time 'uſed to buſineſs, I proteſt to thee, 'child, that I am every day more 'and more pleaſed with the quiet and 'peaceable life which I lead in this 'place.'

CHAP. XI.

THE COUNT-DUKE BECOMES, ALL OF A SUDDEN, SAD AND THOUGHTFUL: THE SURPRIZING CAUSE OF HIS MELANCHOLY, WITH IT'S FATAL CONSEQUENCE.

HIS grace, in order to vary his occupations, amuſed himſelf ſometimes alſo in cultivating his garden. One day, while I beheld him at work, he ſaid to me, in a jocular ſtrain, 'Santillane, thou ſeeſt a miniſter ba'niſhed from court turned gardener 'at Loeches.'—'My lord,' anſwered I, in the ſame tone, 'methinks I ſee 'Dionyſius of Syracuſe, ſchoolmaſter 'at Corinth.' My maſter ſmiled at my reply, and was not at all diſpleaſed at the compariſon.

All the people in the houſe were overjoyed to ſee their maſter, ſuperior to his diſgrace, charmed with a life ſo different from that which he had always led, when we perceived with ſorrow that he viſibly changed: he became gloomy, thoughtful, and ſunk into a moſt profound melancholy. He left off playing with us, and no longer ſeemed ſenſible of all that we could in-

vent

vent for his diverſion; but locked himſelf up after dinner in his cloſet, where he remained alone till night: we imagined that his chagrin had been occaſioned by the returning ideas of his paſt greatneſs, and in that opinion left with him the Dominican friar, whoſe eloquence, however, could not triumph over the melancholy of his grace, which, inſtead of diminiſhing, ſeemed daily to increaſe.

It came into my head, that the penſiveneſs of this miniſter might have ſome particular cauſe, which he was unwilling to diſcloſe; and on this conjecture I formed the deſign of drawing the ſecret from him: for this purpoſe, I lay in wait for an opportunity of ſpeaking to him in private, and having found it, 'My lord,' ſaid I, with an air of reſpect mingled with affection; 'may Gil Blas be ſo bold 'as to put one queſtion to his maſter?' —'Speak,' he replied; 'I give thee 'leave.'—'What,' ſaid I, 'is become of that ſatisfaction which appeared in your excellency's face? 'have you no longer that aſcendancy 'which you had once gained over 'fortune? or does your loſt favour 'excite new regret within you? Would 'you be plunged again in that abyſs of trouble from which your virtue hath extricated you!'—'No, 'thank Heaven!' reſumed the miniſter, 'my memory is no longer engroſſed 'by the part which I acted at court; 'I have for ever forgot the honours 'which I there enjoyed.'—'Why 'then,' ſaid I, 'ſince you have philoſophy enough to baniſh theſe things 'from your remembrance, are you ſo 'weak as to abandon yourſelf to a 'melancholy which alarms us all? 'What is the matter with you, my 'dear maſter?' added I, throwing myſelf at his feet, 'you have, doubtleſs ſome ſecret ſorrow that conſumes you: will you make a myſtery of it to Santillane, whoſe zeal, 'fidelity, and diſcretion, you know ſo 'well? By what misfortune have I 'loſt your confidence?'

'Thou haſt it ſtill,' ſaid he; 'but I confeſs I have a reluctance to 'reveal the cauſe of that ſadneſs with 'which thou ſeeſt me overwhelmed: 'nevertheleſs, I cannot reſiſt the entreaties of ſuch a ſervant and a friend 'as thee. Know, then, the cauſe of 'my diſquiet, which is a ſecret that I 'could impart to none but Santillane. 'Yes,' continued he, 'I am a prey 'to the moſt diſmal melancholy, 'which gradually conſumes my life. 'I ſee almoſt every moment a ſpectre, 'which preſents itſelf before me in the 'moſt terrible ſhape. In vain have I 'ſaid to myſelf that it is no more than 'an illuſion, an unſubſtantial phantom of my brain; the continual apparition infeſts my view, and diſturbs 'my repoſe. Though my underſtanding is ſtrong enough to perſuade me 'that this ſpectre is really nothing, I 'am notwithſtanding weak enough to 'be afflicted at the viſion. This is 'what thou haſt forced me to diſcloſe,' added he; 'and thou mayeſt judge 'whether or not I am to blame in concealing from all the world the cauſe 'of my melancholy.' I was equally grieved and aſtoniſhed to hear ſuch an extraordinary declaration, which was a ſtrong indication of the machine's being diſordered. 'My lord,' ſaid I to the miniſter, 'is not this occaſioned by too little nouriſhment? 'for your abſtinence is exceſſive.'—'That was what I imagined at firſt,' anſwered he; and to try if it was 'actually owing to my diet, I have for 'ſome days paſt eaten more than uſual, 'but without any effect: the phantom ſtill appears.'—'It will certainly diſappear,' ſaid I, to conſole him; 'and if your excellency would relax 'yourſelf a little, by playing again 'with your faithful ſervants, I believe 'you would ſoon find yourſelf delivered from theſe gloomy vapours.'

In a little time after this converſation, his grace fell ſick; and, finding the affair grow ſerious, ſent to Madrid for two notaries to make his will; as alſo for three famous phyſicians, who had the reputation of curing their patients ſometimes. As ſoon as the arrival of theſe laſt was reported in the caſtle, nothing was heard but groans and lamentations; the ſervants looked upon the death of their maſter as juſt at hand; ſo much were they prejudiced againſt theſe gentlemen, who had brought along with them an apothecary and ſurgeon, the uſual executioners of their preſcriptions. They let the notaries do their buſineſs; after which they prepared to do their own. Being of Dr. Sangrado's principles,

in their very firſt conſultation they ordered repeated bloodings; ſo that in ſix days they reduced the count-duke to extremity, and on the ſeventh delivered him entirely from his apparition *.

Upon the death of this miniſter, a deep and ſincere ſorrow reigned in the caſtle of Loeches; all his domeſticks wept bitterly; far from conſoling themſelves for his loſs, with the certainty of being comprehended in his will, there was not one among them who would not have renounced his legacy to recal him to life. As for me, who had been beloved by him, and whoſe attachment flowed from pure perſonal affection, I was more afflicted than all the reſt; and queſtion whether I ſhed more tears for Antonia than for the count-duke.

CHAP. XII.

THE TRANSACTIONS AT THE CASTLE OF LOECHES AFTER THE DEATH OF THE COUNT-DUKE; AND THE DEPARTURE OF SANTILLANE.

THE miniſter, according to his own direction, was buried without noiſe and pomp, in the convent of nuns, by the ſound of our lamentations. After the funeral, Madam d'Olivarez ordered the will to be read, with which all the domeſticks had reaſon to be ſatisfied. Every one had a legacy proportioned to his ſtation; and the leaſt was two thouſand crowns: mine was the moſt conſiderable; his grace having bequeathed to me ten thouſand piſtoles, as a proof of his particular affection. He did not forget the hoſpitals, and founded annual ſervice in ſeveral convents.

Madam d'Olivarez ſent all the domeſticks to Madrid, to receive their legacies from the Steward Don Raymond Caporis, who had orders to pay them; but I could not accompany them, being detained at the caſtle ſeven or eight days by a high fever, which was the fruit of my affliction. In this ſituation I was not abandoned by the Dominican Friar; that good clergyman had conceived an affection for me; and intereſting himſelf in my ſalvation, aſked, when he ſaw me in a fair way, what I intended to do. 'I 'don't know, my good father,' anſwered I; 'I have not as yet deter- 'mined with myſelf on that ſcore: 'at ſome moments I am tempted to 'ſhut myſelf up in a cell, and do pe- 'nance.' — 'Thoſe are precious mo- 'ments!' cried the Dominican: 'Sig- 'nior de Santillane, you will do well 'to profit by them. I adviſe you as a 'friend, without your ceaſing to be a 'layman, to retire, for example, into 'our convent at Madrid; to make 'yourſelf a benefactor to it by a do- 'nation of all your fortune, and die 'there under the habit of St. Domi- 'nique. A great many people ex- 'piate a worldly life by ſuch an end.'

I was then in ſuch a diſpoſition of mind, that I began to reliſh the advice, and told his reverence that I would conſider of it. But having conſulted Scipio, whom I ſaw immediately after the monk, he inveighed againſt that ſentiment, which ſeemed to him the whim of a ſick perſon. 'Fye! Sig- 'nior de Santillane,' ſaid he; 'can 'you be pleaſed with ſuch a retreat? 'will not your houſe at Lirias afford 'one much more agreeable? if you 'was delighted with it heretofore, 'you will have a much better reliſh 'for the ſweets of it now that you are 'of an age much more proper for taſt- 'ing the beauties of nature.'

The ſon of Coſcolina had no great difficulty in making me change my opinion. 'Friend,' ſaid I, 'thou haſt 'prevailed over the Dominican. I ſee 'it will be better for me to return to 'my caſtle; and fix my reſolution ac- 'cordingly: we will repair to Lirias 'as ſoon as I ſhall be in a condition 'to travel.' And this happened very ſoon; for the fever having left me in a little time, I found myſelf ſtrong enough to put my deſign in execution. Scipio and I went firſt to Madrid, the

* The count-duke died on the 12th of July 1645, not at Loeches, but at Toro in New Caſtile; his death (according to report) having been haſtened by his relations, who ſeeing him become more and more odious to the people, even in ſpite of his retreat, were afraid of his ſuffering ſome new ignominy, to the farther diſgrace of his family.

ſight of which city no longer gave me that pleaſure which I had formerly felt. As I knew that almoſt all it's inhabitants abhorred the memory of a miniſter of whom I preſerved the moſt tender remembrance, I could not behold it with a favourable eye; and therefore ſtaid in it only five or ſix days, which Scipio employed in making preparations for our departure for Lirias. While he was buſy about our equipage, I went to Caporis, who gave me my legacy in doubloons: I likewiſe viſited the receivers of the commanderies on whom I had penſions, took meaſures with them for the payment; and, in a word, put all my affairs in order.

On the evening before our departure, I aſked the ſon of Coſcolina, if he had taken his leave of Don Henry. 'Yes,' anſwered he; 'we this 'morning parted good friends: he aſ'ſured me that he was ſorry for my 'leaving him. But if he was ſatis'fied with me, I was not ſo with him: 'it is not enough, that the valet 'pleaſes the maſter, the maſter ought, 'at the ſame time, to pleaſe the valet; 'otherwiſe they are very ill met. Be'ſides,' added he, 'Don Henry makes 'but a pitiful figure at court, where 'he is ſunk into the loweſt contempt. 'He is even pointed at in the ſtreets, 'and every body calls him the ſon of 'the Genoeſe. So you may gueſs whe'ther or not it is agreeable to a lad of 'honour to ſerve a man in ſuch diſ'grace.'

At length we ſet out from Madrid early one morning, and took the road to Cuença, in the following order and equipage: my confident and I were mounted in a chaiſe and pair, conducted by a poſtilion: three moyles, loaded with our baggage and money, and led by two grooms, followed cloſe after; and two luſty lacquies, choſen by Scipio, mounted on mules, and armed to the teeth, brought up the rear; the grooms wore ſabres, and the poſtilion had two good piſtols at his ſaddle-bow. As we were in all ſeven men, ſix of whom were very reſolute, I travelled merrily, without any apprehenſion of loſing my legacy. Our moyles proudly ſounding their bells in the villages through which we paſſed, the peaſants ran to their doors to ſee the march of our equipage, which they imagined belonged to ſome grandee going to take poſſeſſion of a vice-royalty.

CHAP. XIII.

GIL BLAS RETURNS TO HIS CASTLE, WHERE HE IS OVERJOYED TO FIND SERAPHINA, HIS GOD-DAUGHTER, MARRIAGEABLE; AND FALLS IN LOVE WITH ANOTHER LADY.

I Spent fifteen days on the road to Lirias, being under no neceſſity of travelling faſt: all that I deſired was to arrive at it ſafely; and my wiſh was accompliſhed. The ſight of my caſtle at firſt inſpired me with ſome melancholy thoughts, in recalling the memory of Antonia; but I ſoon baniſhed them, by entertaining my fancy with more pleaſant ideas; and this I could the more eaſily do, as twenty years, which were elapſed ſince her death, had a good deal weakened the force of my ſorrow.

As ſoon as I entered the caſtle, Beatrice and her daughter came with great eagerneſs to ſalute me: then the father, mother, and child, hugged one another with tranſports of joy, which charmed me.

After their mutual embraces I looked at my god-daughter attentively, ſaying: 'Can this be that Seraphina whom 'I left in the cradle, when I departed 'from Lirias! I am overjoyed to ſee 'her again ſo tall and ſo handſome: 'we muſt have her ſettled for life.'— 'How! my dear god-father,' cried ſhe, reddening at my laſt words, 'you have 'ſeen me but for a moment, and you 'already talk of getting rid of me!' —'No, my child,' anſwered I; 'we 'don't intend to loſe you by marriage: 'we muſt have a huſband who will en'joy you without robbing your parents 'of your company, and in a manner 'live with us altogether.'

'Such an one offers at preſent,' ſaid Beatrice: 'a gentleman of this country, 'having ſeen Seraphina one day at 'maſs, in the village-chapel, fell in 'love with her. He has been to viſit 'me, declared his paſſion, and has 'aſked my conſent. "If you had it," 'ſaid I to him, "you would be never the "nearer; Seraphina depends upon her "father and god-father, who alone can "diſpoſe

"diſpoſe of her. All that I can do "for you is to inform them by a let-"ter of your demand, which I own "does honour to my daughter." Really, 'gentlemen,' added ſhe, 'I was going 'to write about it immediately; but 'now that you are returned, you ſhall 'do in it what you think proper.'

'But,' ſaid Scipio, 'what charac-'ter has this hidalgo? is he like moſt 'of your ſmall gentry, proud of his 'nobility, and inſolent to plebeians?'— 'Not at all,' replied Beatrice; 'he is 'a ſweet-tempered young man, ex-'tremely polite, has a good mien, and 'is not yet full thirty.'—'You draw 'an agreeable picture of that cavalier,' ſaid I to Beatrice; 'pray, what is his 'name?'—'Don Juan de Jutella,' an-ſwered Scipio's wife: 'he has but lately 'ſucceeded to his father, and lives in 'a caſtle about a league from hence, 'with a younger ſiſter, who is under 'his care.'—'I have formerly,' ſaid I, 'heard of this gentleman's family, 'which is one of the moſt noble in the 'kingdom of Valencia.'—'I eſteem his 'nobility,' cried Scipio, 'leſs than the 'qualities of his heart and underſtand-'ing, and this Don Juan will ſuit us 'very well, provided he be a man of 'honour.'—'He has the reputation of 'one,' ſaid Seraphina, joining in the converſation: 'the inhabitants of 'Lirias, who know him, give him the 'beſt of characters.' At theſe words of my god-daughter, I ſmiled to her father; who, having likewiſe obſerved them, concluded that his daughter was not diſpleaſed at her gallant.

This cavalier ſoon got notice of our arrival at Lirias; and two days after appeared at our caſtle. He ſaluted us gracefully; and, far from contradict-ing by his preſence what Beatrice had ſaid to his advantage, his behaviour made us conceive an high opinion of his merit. He told us, that, as our neighbour, he had come to congratulate us upon our happy return; and we re-ceived him with all the courteſy in our power; but this viſit, which was made out of pure civility, paſſed in mutual compliments; and Don Juan, without having mentioned a ſyllable of his paſſion for Seraphina, retired, only de-ſiring our permiſſion to profit by a neighbourhood which he foreſaw would be very agreeable to him. When he was gone, Beatrice aſking our opinions of the gentleman, we anſwered, that he had prepoſſeſſed us in his favour; and that, in all appearance, Fortune could not offer a better match for Seraphina.

The very next day I went out after dinner, with Coſcolina's ſon, to return the viſit which we owed to Don Juan. We took the road to his caſtle, con-ducted by a guide, who (when we had walked about three quarters of an hour) ſaid, 'There is the caſtle of Don 'Juan de Jutella.' In vain did we caſt our eyes all around the country: it was a long time before we perceived it; nay, we did not diſcover it till we arrived at the gate; for it was ſituated at the foot of a mountain, in the middle of a wood, whoſe lofty trees concealed it from the view. The houſe denoted the nobility more than the opulence of it's maſter; however, when we entered, we found the crazineſs of the building compenſated by the richneſs of the furniture.

Don Juan received us in a very hand-ſome hall, where he introduced us to a lady whom he called his ſiſter Dorothea, and who ſeemed to be about the age of nineteen or twenty. She was full dreſ-ed; becauſe, having expected our viſit, ſhe was deſirous of appearing as amia-ble as ſhe could; and, offering herſelf to my view, in all her charms, ſhe made the ſame impreſſion that Antonia had made upon my heart; that is, I was diſconcerted; but concealed my diſorder ſo well, that Scipio himſelf did not obſerve it. Our converſation, like that of the preceding day, turned upon the mutual pleaſure we ſhould enjoy, in viſiting one another, and liv-ing together in good neighbourhood. He did not, as yet, ſpeak to us of Se-raphina, and we gave him no encou-ragement to declare his paſſion, reſolv-ing that it ſhould firſt come from him-ſelf. During the converſation, I fre-quently eyed Dorothea, though I affected to look at her as little as poſſible; and every time our eyes met, ſhe darted freſh arrows into my ſoul. I muſt ſay, how-ever, for the ſake of truth, that this beloved object was not a perfect beauty; for, though her ſkin was of a dazzling whiteneſs, and her lips of the com-plexion of the roſe, her noſe was ſome-what too long, and her eyes too little. Nevertheleſs, the whole together quite enchanted me.

In ſhort, I did not leave the caſtle of Jutella

Jutella as I had entered it; and on my return to Lirias, my mind was ſo wholly poſſeſſed by Dorothea, that I ſaw nothing but her, and ſhe was the ſole ſubject of my converſation. 'How, 'maſter!' ſaid Scipio, looking at me with aſtoniſhment, 'you are very full 'of Don Juan's ſiſter. Hath ſhe made 'a conqueſt of your heart?'—'Yes, 'friend', anſwered I; 'and I bluſh at 'my own weakneſs. O Heavens! 'muſt I, who, ſince Antonia's death, 'have beheld a thouſand beauties with 'indifference, meet with one at my age, 'who, in ſpite of all my endeavours, 'inflames me with love!'—'Well, Sir,' replied Coſcolina's ſon; 'you ought 'to rejoice inſtead of complaining at 'the adventure: there is nothing ridi-'culous in a man of your age being in 'love; and time hath not as yet ſo fur-'rowed your brow, as to deprive you 'of the hope of pleaſing. Take my 'advice; and when next you ſee Don 'Juan, boldly demand his ſiſter in 'marriage; he cannot refuſe her to 'ſuch a perſon as you: and beſides, if 'it is abſolutely neceſſary that Doro-'thea's huſband ſhould be a gentleman, 'are not you one? You have letters of 'nobility, and that is enough for your 'poſterity, when time ſhall have ſhroud-'ed theſe letters with that thick veil 'which covers the origin of all great 'families. After four or five genera-'tions, the race of Santillane will be 'moſt illuſtrious!'

CHAP. THE LAST.

THE DOUBLE MARRIAGE CELEBRATED AT LIRIAS, WHICH CONCLUDES THE HISTORY OF GIL BLAS DE SANTILLANE.

SCIPIO, by this diſcourſe, encouraged me to declare myſelf the lover of Dorothea, without conſidering that he expoſed me to the riſque of a refuſal: I could not, however, determine upon it without trembling; for, although I looked younger than I was, and could have ſunk ten good years at leaſt of my age, I could not help thinking I had good reaſon to doubt of my pleaſing a young beauty. I reſolved, nevertheleſs, to riſque the demand, as ſoon as I ſhould ſee her brother, who, for his part, being uncertain of obtaining my god-daughter, was not without abundance of anxiety.

He returned to my houſe next morning juſt as I had done dreſſing, and ſaid, 'Signior de Santillane, I am 'come to-day to talk with you about a 'ſerious affair.' I carried him into my cloſet, where coming to the point at once, 'I believe,' continued he, 'that 'you are not ignorant of my errand. 'I love Seraphina; and as you can 'ſway her father to any thing, pray, 'render him favourable to me; pro-'cure for me the object of my 'paſſion, and let me owe the happineſs 'of my life to you.'—'Signior Don 'Juan,' anſwered I, 'ſince you come 'to the buſineſs at once, give me leave 'to follow your example; and, after 'having promiſed you my good offices 'with the father of my god-daughter, 'to demand your intereſt with your 'ſiſter, in my behalf.'

At theſe laſt words, Don Juan expreſſed an agreeable ſurprize, from which I drew a favourable omen. 'Is 'it poſſible,' cried he, 'that Doro-'thea made a conqueſt of your heart 'yeſterday?'—'I am quite charmed 'with her!' ſaid I; 'and will think 'myſelf the happieſt of mankind, if 'my demand is agreeable to you both.' —'Of that you may be aſſured,' he replied: 'noble as we are, we will 'not diſdain your alliance.'—'I am 'very glad,' anſwered I, 'that you 'make no difficulty in receiving a 'plebeian for your brother-in-law: 'I eſteem you the more on that account; 'and in ſo doing you ſhew your good 'underſtanding: but were you even ſo 'vain as to refuſe your ſiſter's hand to 'any body but a gentleman, know, 'that I could ſatisfy your pride; I 'have laboured twenty years under 'the miniſter; and the king, to recom-'penſe the ſervices which I have done 'the ſtate, has gratified me with let-'ters of nobility, which you ſhall 'ſee.' So ſaying, I took my patent out of the drawer where it lay concealed, and preſented it to the gentleman, who read it attentively from beginning to end with vaſt ſatisfaction. 'This is excellent!' ſaid he, reſtoring the papers: 'Dorothea is yours.'—'And you,' cried I, 'may depend 'upon Seraphina.'

Theſe two marriages being thus reſolved upon, all that remained was to know

know if the brides would conſent with a good grace; for Don Juan and I, being equally delicate, did not intend to force their inclinations. That gentleman returned, therefore, to his caſtle of Jutella, to propoſe me to his ſiſter; and I aſſembled Scipio, Beatrice, and their daughter, to communicate the converſation I had with that cavalier. Beatrice was for accepting him without heſitation; and Seraphina, by her ſilence, ſhewed that ſhe was of her mother's opinion. As to the father, he was not indeed averſe to the match; but expreſſed ſome uneaſineſs about the dowry, which, he ſaid, muſt be given to the gentleman, whoſe caſtle had ſuch preſſing need of repairs. I ſtopped Scipio's mouth, telling him, that affair concerned me; and that I would make a preſent to my god-daughter of four thouſand piſtoles for her portion.

Don Juan returning that very evening, 'Your affairs,' ſaid I to him, 'ſucceed to a miracle: I wiſh mine 'may be in no worſe condition.'— 'They are alſo on an excellent foot-'ing,' he replied; 'I had no occaſion 'to employ authority to obtain Do-'rothea's conſent: your perſon is to 'her liking, and ſhe is pleaſed with 'your behaviour. You was appre-'henſive of your being diſagreeable to 'her; and ſhe is more juſtly afraid, 'that having nothing but her heart 'and hand to offer—' 'What more 'would I have!' cried I in a tranſport of joy: 'ſince the charming Doro-'thea has no reluctance to unite her 'fate with mine, I aſk no more: I am 'rich enough to marry her without a 'portion, and the poſſeſſion of her 'alone will crown my wiſhes!'

Don Juan and I, very well pleaſed with having brought matters happily ſo far, reſolved to haſten our nuptials, by ſuppreſſing all ſuperfluous ceremonies. I brought this gentleman and Seraphina's parents together; and after they had agreed upon the conditions of the marriage, he took his leave, promiſing to return next day with Dorothea. The deſire I had of appearing agreeable to that lady, made me employ three good hours at leaſt in adjuſting and Adonizing myſelf; and yet, for all that, I could not make myſelf pleaſed with my own perſon. It is only a pleaſure for a young man to prepare himſelf for viſiting his miſtreſs; but to one who begins to grow old, it is quite a fatigue. However, I was more happy than I deſerved to be.

When next I ſaw Don Juan's ſiſter, ſhe regarded me with ſuch a favourable eye, that I imagined myſelf ſtill good for ſomething. I had a long converſation with her, was charmed with her diſpoſition, and concluded, that, with delicate behaviour, and a great deal of complaiſance, I ſhould become a beloved ſpouſe. Elevated with this agreeable hope, I ſent to Valencia for two notaries, who drew up the contract of marriage; then we had recourſe to the Curate of Paterna, who came to Lirias, and married Don Juan and me to our miſtreſſes.

Thus, for a ſecond time, did I light the torch of Hymen, and had no cauſe to repent my conduct. Dorothea, like a virtuous wife, made a pleaſure of her duty; and, ſenſible of my care to anticipate her deſires, ſoon attached herſelf to me, as much as if I had been a young man. On the other hand, Don Juan and my god-daughter were inflamed with mutual ardour; and, what was very ſingular, the two ſiſters-in-law conceived the moſt paſſionate and ſincere friendſhip for one another. As for my part, I found ſo many good qualities in my brother-in-law, that I felt a real affection for him, and he did not repay it with ingratitude. In ſhort, the union that reigned among us was ſuch, that in the evening, when we parted only till next day, that ſeparation was not performed without pain; ſo that of the two families we reſolved to make one, which ſhould live ſometimes at the caſtle of Lirias, and ſometimes at that of Jutella, which, for this purpoſe, received great reparations, by the help of his excellency's piſtoles.

I have for three years, gentle reader, led a delicious life with people whom I love ſo much; and, to crown my felicity, Heaven has bleſſed me with two children, whom I piouſly believe to be my own, and whoſe education ſhall be the amuſement of my old age.

FINIS.

MVSEVM BRITANNICVM

ABAILARD
ET
ELOÏSE.

PIECE DRAMATIQUE,

EN VERS ET EN CINQ ACTES.

Infelix perii dotibus ipſe meis.

Ovid. de Pont. Epiſt. 7.

Par M. J. B. Gius

Le Prix eſt de trente Sols.

A LONDRES.

M. DCC. LII.